

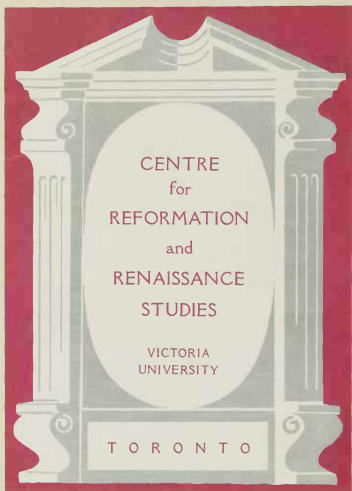
# THE FATAL DOWRY

BY

PHILIP MASSINGER AND  
NATHANIEL FIELD

CHARLES LACY LOCKERT, JR.

PR  
2704  
F5  
1918



CENTRE  
for  
REFORMATION  
and  
RENAISSANCE  
STUDIES

VICTORIA  
UNIVERSITY

T O R O N T O









# THE FATAL DOWRY

BY

PHILIP MASSINGER AND  
NATHANIEL FIELD

EDITED, FROM THE ORIGINAL QUARTO,  
WITH INTRODUCTION AND NOTES

A DISSERTATION

PRESENTED TO THE  
FACULTY OF PRINCETON UNIVERSITY  
IN CANDIDACY FOR THE DEGREE  
OF DOCTOR OF PHILOSOPHY

BY

CHARLES LACY LOCKERT, JR.  
ASSISTANT PROFESSOR OF ENGLISH, KENYON COLLEGE

PRESS OF  
THE NEW ERA PRINTING COMPANY  
LANCASTER, PA.

1918

PR.  
2704

F5  
1918

REF. & REN.

Accepted by the Department of English, June, 1916

6140



## PREFACE

THIS critical edition of *The Fatal Dowry* was undertaken as a Thesis in partial fulfilment of the requirements for the degree of Ph.D. at Princeton University. It was compiled under the guidance and direction of Professor T. M. Parrott of that institution, and every page of it is indebted to him for suggestion, advice, and criticism. I can but inadequately indicate the scope of his painstaking and scholarly supervision, and can even less adequately express my appreciation of his ever-patient aid, which alone made this work possible.

I desire also to acknowledge my debt to Professor J. Duncan Spaeth of Princeton University, for his valuable suggestions in regard to the presentation of my material, notably in the Introduction; also to Professor T. W. Baldwin of Muskingum College and Mr. Henry Bowman, both of them then fellow graduate students of mine at Princeton, for assistance on several occasions in matters of special inquiry; and to Dr. M. W. Tyler of the Princeton Department of History for directing me in clearing up a lego-historical point; and finally to the libraries of Yale and Columbia Universities for their kind loan of needed books.



## INTRODUCTION

IN the Stationer's Register the following entry is recorded under the date of "30° Martij 1632:"

CONSTABLE Entred for his copy vnder the hands of Sir HENRY HERBERT and master SMITHWICKE warden a Tragedy called *the ffatall Dowry*. Vj d.

In the year 1632 was published a quarto volume whose title-page was inscribed: *The Fatall Dowry: a Tragedy: As it hath been often Acted at the Private House in Blackfriars, by his Majesties Servants. Written by P. M. and N. F. London, Printed by John Norton, for Francis Constable, and are to be sold at his shop at the Crane, in Pauls Churchyard. 1632.*

That the initials by which the authors are designated stand for Philip Massinger and Nathaniel Field is undoubted.

## LATER TEXTS

There is no other seventeenth century edition of *The Fatal Dowry*. It was included in various subsequent collections, as follows:

- I. *The Works of Philip Massinger*—edited by Thomas Coxeter, 1759—re-issued in 1761, with an introduction by T. Davies.
- II. *The Dramatic Works of Philip Massinger*—edited by John Monck Mason, 1779.
- III. *The Plays of Philip Massinger*—edited by William Gifford, 1805. There was a revised second edition in 1813, which is still regarded as the Standard Massinger Text, and was followed in subsequent editions of Gifford.
- IV. *Modern British Drama*—edited by Sir Walter Scott, 1811. The text of this reprint of *The Fatal Dowry* is Gifford's.
- V. *Dramatic Works of Massinger and Ford*—edited by Hartley Coleridge, 1840 (*et seq.*). This follows the text of Gifford.
- VI. *The Plays of Philip Massinger*. From the Text of William Gifford. With the Addition of the Tragedy *Believe as You List*. Edited by Francis Cunningham, 1867 (*et seq.*).

*The Fatal Dowry* in this edition, as in the preceding, is a mere reprint of the Second Edition of Gifford.

VII. *Philip Massinger*. Selected Plays. (Mermaid Series.)  
 Edited by Arthur Symons, 1887-9 (*et seq.*).

In addition to the above, *The Fatal Dowry* appeared in *The Plays of Philip Massinger*, adapted for family reading and the use of young persons, by the omission of objectionable passages, —edited by Harness, 1830-1; and another expurgated version was printed in the *Mirror of Taste and Dramatic Censor*, 1810. Both of these are based on the text of Gifford.

The edition of Coxeter is closest of all to the Quarto, following even many of its most palpable mistakes, and adding some blunders on its own account. Mason accepts practically all of Coxeter's corrections, and supplies a great many more variants himself, not all of which are very happy. Both these eighteenth century editors continually contract for the sake of securing a perfectly regular metre (e. g.: *You're* for *You are*, I, i, 139; *th' honours* for *the honours*, I, ii, 35; etc.), while Gifford's tendency is to give the full form for even the contractions of the Quarto, changing its *'em's* to *them's*, etc. Gifford can scarce find words sharp enough to express his scorn for his predecessors in their lack of observance of the text of the Quarto, yet he himself frequently repeats their gratuitous emendations when the original was a perfectly sure guide, and he has almost a mania for tampering with the Quarto on his own account. Symons' *Mermaid* text, while based essentially on that of Gifford, in a number of instances departs from it, sometimes to make further emendations, but more often to go back from those of Gifford to the version of the original, so that on the whole this is the best text yet published.

There has been a German translation by the Graf von Baudisson, under the title of *Die Unselige Mitgift*, in his *Ben Jonson und seine Schule*, Leipzig, 1836; and a French translation, in prose, under the title of *La dot fatale* by E. Lafond in *Contemporains de Shakespeare*, Paris, 1864.

#### DATE

The date of the composition or original production of *The Fatal Dowry* is not known. The Quarto speaks of it as having

been "often acted," so there is nothing to prevent our supposing that it came into existence many years before its publication. It does not seem to have been entered in Sir Henry Herbert's Office Book.<sup>1</sup> This would indicate its appearance to have been prior to Herbert's assumption of the duties of his office in August, 1623. In seeking a more precise date we can deal only in probabilities.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Fleay (*Chron. Eng. Dra.*, I, 208) thinks that the otherwise lost Massinger play, *The Judge*, licensed by Herbert in 1627, and included in the list of Warburton's collection, may have been *The Fatal Dowry*. He declares, moreover, that "the decree in favor of creditors in I, ii a was a statute made in 1623," and suggests that Massinger after this date made over an independent play of Field's, now lost. But I think that any one who surveys in *The Fatal Dowry* the respective hands of its authors will incline strongly to the conviction that this drama is the offspring of joint effort rather than the re-handling of one man's work by another. The decree to which Fleay has reference appears to be that to be found in *Statutes of the Realm*, IV, ii, 1227-9, recorded as 21° Jac I, 19. This is an act passed by the parliament of 1623-4; it somewhat increases the stringency of the already-existing severe laws in regard to bankrupts, but contains nothing which even faintly suggests the decree in our play, by which the creditors are empowered to withhold the corpse of their debtor from burial; and, indeed, it is obviously impossible that a statute permitting any such practice could have been passed in Christian England of the seventeenth century. The fact is that this feature of the plot is taken direct from a classical author (see under SOURCES), and it would be gratuitous to assume in it a reference to contemporaneous legislation. As for the hypothesis that *The Fatal Dowry* and *The Judge* are the same play, in the utter absence of any supporting evidence it must be thrown out of court. This sort of identification is a confirmed vice with Fleay. *The Judge* is, moreover, listed as a comedy (see reprint of Warburton's list in Fleay's *The Life and Work of Shakespeare*, p. 358).

<sup>2</sup> Two other arguments—both fallacious—have been advanced for a more assured dating.

Formal prologues and epilogues came into fashion about 1620, and the absence of such appendages in the case of *The Fatal Dowry* has been generally taken as evidence for its appearance before that year; but for a Massinger production no such inference can be drawn—there is no formal prologue or epilogue in any of his extant plays before *The Emperor of the East* and *Believe as You List*, which were licensed for acting in 1631.

The suggestion (Fleay: *Chron. Eng. Dra.*, I, p. 208) that Field took the part of Florimel, and that the mention of her age as thirty-two years (II, ii, 17) has reference to his own age at the time the play was produced (thus fixing the date: 1619), is an idea so far-fetched and fantastic that it is amazing to find it quoted with perfect gravity by Ward (*Hist.*

The play having been produced by the King's Men, a company in which Field acted, it was most probably written during his association therewith. This was formed in 1616; the precise date of his retirement from the stage is not known. His name appears in the patent of March 27, 1619, just after the death of Burbage, and again and for the last time in a livery list for his Majesty's Servants, dated May 19, 1619. It is absent from the next grant for livery (1621) and from the actors' lists for various plays which are assigned to 1619 or 1620. We may therefore assume safely that his connection with the stage ended before the close of 1619. On the basis of probability, then, the field is narrowed to 1616-19.<sup>3</sup>

More or less presumptive evidence may be adduced for a yet more specific dating. During these years that Field acted with the King's Men, two plays appeared which bear strong internal evidence of being products of his collaboration with Massinger and Fletcher: *The Knight of Malta* and *The Queen of Corinth*. While several parallels of phraseology are afforded for *The Fatal Dowry* by these (as, indeed, by every one of the works of Massinger) they are not nearly so numerous or so striking as similarities discoverable between it and certain other dramas of the Massinger corpus. With none does the connection seem so intimate as with *The Unnatural Combat*. Both plays open with a scene in which a young suppliant for a father's cause is counseled, in passages irresistibly reminiscent of each other, to lay aside pride and modesty for the parent's sake, because not otherwise can justice be gained, and it is the custom of the age to sue for it shamelessly. Moreover, the offer by Beaufort and his associates

*Eng. Dra. Lit.*, III, 39). That Field, second only to Burbage among the actors of his time, should have played the petty role of Florimel is a ridiculous supposition. It is strange that anyone who considered references of this sort a legitimate clue did not build rather upon the statement (II, i, 13) that Charalois was twenty-eight. But such grounds for theorizing are utterly unsubstantial; there is no earthly warrant for identifying the age of an author's creation with the age of the author himself.

<sup>3</sup> I would not, however, think it very improbable that Field might have engaged in the composition of *The Fatal Dowry* immediately after his retirement, when the ties with his old profession were, perhaps, not yet altogether broken.

to Malefort of any boon he may desire as a recompense for his service, and his acceptance of it, correspond strikingly in both conduct and language with the conferring of a like favor upon Rochfort by the Court (I, ii, 258 ff.); while the request which Malefort prefers, that his daughter be married to Beaufort Junior, and the language with which that young man acknowledges this meets his own dearest wish, bear a no less patent resemblance to the bestowal of Beaumelle upon Charalois (II, ii, 284-297). Now this last parallel is significant, because *The Unnatural Combat* is an unaided production of Massinger, while the analogue in *The Fatal Dowry* occurs in a scene that is by the hand of Field. The similarity may, of course, be only an accident, but presumably it is not. Then did Field borrow from Massinger, or did Massinger from Field? The most plausible theory is that *The Unnatural Combat* was written immediately after *The Fatal Dowry*, when Massinger's mind was so saturated with the contents of the tragedy just laid aside that he was liable to echo in the new drama the expressions and import of lines in the old, whether by himself or his collaborator. That at any rate the chronological relationship of the two plays is one of juxtaposition is further attested by the fact that in minor parallelisms,<sup>4</sup> too, to *The Fatal Dowry*, *The Unnatural Combat* is richer than any other work of Massinger.

Unfortunately *The Unnatural Combat* is itself another play of whose date no more can be said with assurance than that it precedes the entry of Sir Henry Herbert into office in 1623, though its crude horrors, its ghost, etc., suggest moreover that it is its author's initial independent venture in the field of tragedy, his *Titus Andronicus*, an ill-advised attempt to produce something after the "grand manner" of half a generation back. Next in closeness to *The Fatal Dowry* among the works of Massinger as regards the number of its reminiscences of phraseology stands his share of *The Virgin Martyr*; next in closeness as regards the

<sup>4</sup> On a careful inspection of the entire dramatic output of Massinger, both unaided work and plays done in collaboration, I have found worthy of record parallels to passages in *The Fatal Dowry* to the number of: 24, in *The Unnatural Combat*, 14 in the Massinger share (about  $\frac{3}{5}$ ) of *The Virgin Martyr*, 18 in *The Renegado*, 11 in *The Duke of Milan*, 10 in *The Guardian*, and in none of the rest as many as 8.—But Massinger's undoubted share ( $\frac{1}{3}$ ) of *The Little French Lawyer* yields 6;  $\frac{2}{3}$  of *The Double Marriage*, 6;  $\frac{2}{3}$  of *The Spanish Curate*, 6;  $\frac{2}{3}$  of *Sir John van Olden Barnavelt*, 4

strikingness of these parallels stands his share of *The Little French Lawyer*. These two plays can be dated *circa* 1620.

To sum up:

*The Fatal Dowry* appears to antedate the installation of Sir Henry Herbert in 1623.

It was probably written while Field was with the King's Men; with whom he became associated in 1616, and whom he probably quitted in 1619.

The indications point to its composition during the latter part of this three-year period (1616-19), for it yields more and closer parallels to *The Virgin Martyr* and *The Little French Lawyer*, dated about 1620, than to *The Knight of Malta* and *The Queen of Corinth*, dated 1617-8,—closer, indeed, than to any work of Massinger save one, *The Unnatural Combat*, itself an undated but evidently early play, with which its relationship is clearly of the most intimate variety.

The following (at best hazardously conjectural) scheme of sequence may be advanced:

Fletcher and Massinger and Field together wrote *The Knight of Malta* and *The Queen of Corinth*—according to received theory, in 1617 or 1618. Thereafter, the last two collaborators (desirous, perhaps, of trying what they could do unaided and unshackled by the dominating association of the chief dramatist of the day) joined hands in the production of the tragedy which is the subject of our study. Then, upon Field's retirement, Massinger struck off, with *The Unnatural Combat*, into unassisted composition; but we next find him, whether because he recognized the short-comings of this turgid play or for other reasons, again in double harness, at work upon *The Virgin Martyr* and *The Little French Lawyer*. On this hypothesis, *The Fatal Dowry* would be dated 1618-9.

#### SOURCES

No source is known for the main plot of *The Fatal Dowry*. A Spanish original has been suspected, but it has never come to light. The stress laid throughout the action on that peculiarly Spanish conception of "the point of honor" (see under CRITICAL



ESTIMATE, in consideration of the character of Charalois) is unquestionably suggestive of the land south of the Pyrenees, and we have an echo of *Don Quixote* in the exclamation of Charalois (III, i, 441): "Away, thou curious impertinent." The identification, however, of the situation at Aymer's house in IV, ii with a scene in Cervantes' *El viejo celoso* (Obras Completas De Cervantes, Tomo XII, p. 277) is extremely fanciful. The only similarity consists in the circumstance that in both, while the husband is on the stage, the wife, who, unknown to him, entertains a lover in the next room, is heard speaking within. But this is a spontaneous outcry on the part of Beaumelle, who does not suspect the proximity of her husband, and her discovery follows, and from this the denouement of the play; whereas in Cervantes' *entremes* the wife deliberately calls in bravado to her niece, who is also on-stage, and boasts of her lover,—and the husband thinks this is in jest, and nothing comes of it but comedy.

The theme of the son's redemption of his father's corpse by his own captivity is from the classical story of Cimon and Miltiades, as narrated by Valerius Maximus, *De dictis factisque memorabilibus*, etc. Lib. V, cap. III. *De ingratissimis externorum: Bene egissent Athenienses cum Miltiade, si eum post trecenta millia Persarum Marathone devicta, in exilium protinus misissent, ac non in carcere et vinculis mori coegissent; sed, ut puto, hactenus saevire adversus optime meritum abunde duxerunt: immo ne corpus quidem eius, sic expirare coacti sepulturae primus mandari passi sunt, quam filius eius Cimon eisdem vinculis se constringendum traderet. Hanc hereditatem paternam maximi ducis filius, et futurus ipse aetatis suae dux maximus, solam se crevisse, catenas et carcerem, gloriari potuit.*

In the version of Cornelius Nepos (*Vitae, Cimon I*) Cimon is incarcerated against his will.

The action of the play is given the historical setting of the later fifteenth century wars of Louis XI of France and Charles the Bold of Burgundy, although this background is extremely hazy. The hero's name is the title which Charles bore while heir-apparent to the Duchy of Burgundy; mention is made of Charles himself ("The warlike Charloyes," I, ii, 171), to Louis ("the subtile Fox of France, The politique Lewis," I, ii, 123-4), and to "the more desperate Swisse" (I, ii, 124), against whom Charles

lost his life and the power of Burgundy was broken; while the three great defeats he suffered at their hands, Granson, Morat, Nancy, are named in I, ii, 170. Shortly after these disasters the events which the play sets forth must be supposed to occur; the parliament by which in our drama Dijon is governed was established by Louis XI when he annexed Burgundy in 1477 and thereby abolished her ducal independence.

#### COLLABORATION

It is doubtful if Massinger ever collaborated with any author whose manner harmonized as well with his own as did Field's. In his partnership with Decker in *The Virgin Martyr*, the alternate hands of the two dramatists afford a weird contrast.<sup>5</sup> His union with Fletcher was less incongruous, but Fletcher was too much inclined to take the bit between his teeth to be a comfortable companion in double harness,<sup>6</sup> and at all times his volatile, prodigal genius paired ill with the earnest, painstaking, not over-poetic moralist. But in Field Massinger found an associate whose connection with himself was not only congenial, but even beneficial, to the end that together they could achieve certain results of which either was individually incapable; just as it has been established was the case in the Middleton-Rowley collaboration. To a formal element of verse different, indeed, from Massinger's, but not obtrusively so, a certain moral fibre of his own (perhaps derived from his clerical antecedents), and a like familiarity with stage technique, Field added qualities which Massinger notably lacked, and thereby complemented him: a light and vigorous (if sometimes coarse) comic touch as opposed to Massinger's cumbrous humor; a freshness and first-hand acquaintance with life as opposed to Massinger's bookishness; a capacity

<sup>5</sup> *E. g.*, I, i (Massinger) with its grave rhetoric uniformly sustained, and, in immediate succession, II, i (Decker), a medley of coarse buffoonery and tender and beautiful verse.

<sup>6</sup> As witness *The False One*. Here Massinger seems to have projected a stately historical drama of war and factional intrigue, with a conception of Cleopatra as the Great Queen, more a Semiramis or a Zenobia than "the serpent of old Nile," and so treats his subject in the first and last Acts; while Fletcher "assists" him by filling the middle section of the play with scenes theatrically effective but leading nowhere, and in them makes the heroine the traditional "gipsy" Cleopatra.

to visualize and individualize character as opposed to Massinger's weakness for drawing types rather than people. The fruit of their joint endeavors testifies to a harmonious, conscientious, and mutually respecting partnership.

In consideration of the above, it is surprising how substantially in accord are most of the opinions that have been expressed concerning the share of the play written by each author.

"A critical reader," says Monck Mason, "will perceive that Rochfort and Charalois speak a different language in the Second and Third Acts, from that which they speak in the first and last, which are undoubtedly Massinger's; as is also Part of the Fourth Act, but not the whole of it."

Dr. Ireland, in a postscript to the text of *The Fatal Dowry* in Gifford's edition, agrees with Mason in assigning the Second Act to Field and also the First Scene of the Fourth Act; the Third Act, however, he claims for Massinger, as well as that share of the play with which Mason credits him. Fleay and Boyle, the chief modern commentators who have taken up the question of the division of authorship with the aid of metrical tests and other criteria, agree fairly well with the speculations of their less scientific predecessors, and adopt an intermediate, reconciling position on the disputed Third Act, dividing it between the two dramatists.<sup>7</sup>

Boyle (*Englische Studien*, V, 94) assigns to Massinger Act I; Act III as far as line 316; Act IV, Scenes ii, iii, and iv; and the whole of Act V, with the exception of Scene ii, lines 80-120, which he considers an interpolation of Field, whom he also believes to have revised the latter part of I, ii (from *Exeunt Officers with Romont* to end).

Fleay (*Chron. Eng. Dra.*, I, 208) exactly agrees with this division save that the latter part of I, ii, which Boyle believes emended by Field, he assigns to that author outright; and that he places the division in Act III twenty-seven lines later (Field after *Manent Char. Rom.*).

<sup>7</sup> The only other modern attempt to apportion the play is that of C. Beck (*The Fatal Dowry*, Friedrich-Alexander Univ. thesis, 1906, pp. 89-94). He assigns Massinger everything except the prose passages of II, ii and IV, i, and perhaps II, i, 93-109. His *a priori* theory of distribution seems to be that all portions of the play which he deems of worth must be Massinger's. It is difficult to speak of Beck's monograph with sufficiently scant respect.

In my own investigation I have used for each Scene the following tests to distinguish the hands of the two authors:

(a) Broad aesthetic considerations: the comparison of style and method of treatment with the known work of either dramatist.

(b) The test of parallel phrases. Massinger's habit of repeating himself is notorious. I have gone through the entire body of his work, both that which appears under his name, and that which has been assigned to him by modern research in the Beaumont & Fletcher plays, and noted all expressions I found analogous to any which occur in *The Fatal Dowry*. I have done the same for Field's work, examining his two comedies, *Woman is a Weathercock* and *Amends for Ladies*, and Acts I and V of *The Knight of Malta* and III and IV of *The Queen of Corinth*, which the consensus of critical opinion recognizes (in my judgment, correctly) as his. He is generally believed to have collaborated also in *The Honest Man's Fortune*, but the exact extent of his work therein is so uncertain that I have not deemed it a proper field from which to adduce evidence. His hand has been asserted by one authority or another to appear in various other plays of the period, he having served, as it were, the role of a literary scapegoat on whom it was convenient to father any Scene not identified as belonging to Beaumont, Fletcher, or Massinger; but there is no convincing evidence for his participation in the composition of any extant dramas save the above named.

(c) Metrical tests. I have computed the figures for *The Fatal Dowry* in regard to double or feminine endings and run-on lines. Massinger's verse displays high percentages (normally 30 per cent. to 45 per cent.) in the case of either. Field's verse varies considerably in the matter of run-on lines at various periods of his life, but the proportion of them is always smaller than Massinger's. His double endings average about 18 per cent. I have also counted in each Scene the number of speeches that end within the line, and that end with the line, respectively. (Speeches ending with fragmentary lines are considered to have mid-line endings.) This is declared by Oliphant (*Eng. Studien*, XIV, 72) the surest test for the work of Massinger. "His percentage of speeches," he says, "that end where the verses end is ordinarily as low as 15." This is a tremendous exaggeration, but it is true

that the ratio of mid-line endings is much higher in Massinger than in any of his contemporaries—commonly 2:1, or higher.

We find the First Scene of Act I one of those skillful introductions to the action which the "stage-poet" knew so well how to handle, for which reason, probably, he was generally intrusted with the initial Scene of the plays in which he collaborated. Thoroughly Massingerian are its satire upon the degenerate age and its grave, measured style, rhetorical where it strives to be passionate, and replete with characteristic expressions. Especially striking examples of the dramatist's well-known and never-failing *penchant* for the recurrent use of certain ideas and phrases are: *As I could run the hazard of a check for't.* (l. 10)—cf. C-G, 87 b, 156 b, 327 b; D. V, 328; XI, 28;—*You shall o'ercome.* (l. 101)—cf. C-G. 230 b, 248 b, 392 a;— and ll. 183-7—cf. C-G. 206 a, 63 a, 91 a, 134 b. The correspondence between ll. 81-99 and the opening of *The Unnatural Combat* has already been remarked on, while further reminiscences of the same passage are to be found elsewhere in Massinger (C-G. 104 a, 195 b). Metrical tests show for the Scene 33 per cent. double endings and 29 per cent. run-on lines, figures which substantiate the conclusions derivable from a scrutiny of its style and content.<sup>9</sup>

In I, ii Massinger appears in his element, an episode permitting opportunities for the forensic fervor which was his especial forte. Such Scenes occur again and again in his plays: the conversion of the daughters of Theophilus by the Virgin Martyr, the plea of the Duke of Milan to the Emperor, of old Malefort to his judges in *The Unnatural Combat*, of Antiochus to the Carthaginian senate in *Believe as You List*. From the speech with which Du

<sup>8</sup> References to the plays of Massinger are either by page and column of the Cunningham-Gifford edition of his works (designated C-G.), or, in the case of plays in the Beaumont & Fletcher *corpus* in which he or Field collaborated, by volume and page of the Dyce edition (designated D.). Field's two independent comedies are referred to by page of the Mermaid Series volume which contains them: *Nero and Other Plays* (designated M.).

<sup>9</sup> The figures for the speech-ending test for each scene will be found in the table at the end of this section, and are not given in the course of the detailed examination of the play, save in the case of one passage, where the ambiguity of their testimony is noted. In all other Scenes they merely corroborate the evidence of the other tests.

Croy opens court (I, ii, 1-3)—cf. the inauguration of the senate-house scene in *The Roman Actor*, C-G. 197 b,

*Fathers conscript, may this our meeting be  
Happy to Caesar and the commonwealth!*

—to the very end, it abounds with Massingerisms: *Knowing judgment; Speak to the cause; I foresaw this* (an especial favorite of the poet's); *Strange boldness!*; the construction, *If that curses*, etc.;—also cf. l. 117 ff. with

*To undervalue him whose least fam'd service  
Scornes to be put in ballance with the best  
Of all your Counsailes.*

(*Sir John van Olden B.*, Bullen's *Old Plays*, II, 232.)

We have seen that the hand of Field has been asserted to appear in the last half of this Scene. This is probably due to the presence here of several rhymed couplets, which are uncommon in Massinger save as tags at the end of Scenes or of impressive speeches, but not absolutely unknown in his work; whereas Field employs them frequently—in particular to set off a gnomic utterance. If Field's indeed, they can scarcely represent more than his revising touch here and there; everything else in this part of the Scene bespeaks Massinger no less clearly than does the portion which precedes it. There continues the same stately declamation, punctuated at intervals by brief comments or replies, the same periodic sentence-structure, the same or even greater frequency of characteristic diction. Massinger again and again refers in his plays to the successive hardships of the summer's heat and winter's frost (l. 184—cf. C-G. 168 b, 205 a, 392 b, 488 b); *stand bound* occurs literally scores of times upon his pages (three times on C-G. 77 a alone);—typical also are *in their dreadful ruins buried quick* (l. 178—cf. C-G. 603 a, 625 a, *Sir John van Olden B.*, Bullin's *Old Plays*, II, 209), *Be constant in it* (l. 196—cf. C-G. 2 a, 137 a, 237 a, 329 a), *Strange rashness!*, *It is my wonder* (l. 293—cf. C-G. 26 b, 195 b; D. VIII, 438; XI, 34). Cf. also l. 156,

*To quit the burthen of a hopeless life,*

with C-G. 615 b,

*To ease the burthen of a wretched life.*

And ll. 284-6,

*But would you had  
Made trial of my love in anything  
But this,*

with C-G. 286 a,

*I could wish you had  
Made trial of my love some other way.*

And again, ll. 301-3,

*and his goodness  
Rising above his fortune, seems to me,  
Princelike, to will, not ask, a courtesy.*

with D. XI, 37,

*in his face appears  
A kind of majesty which should command,  
Not sue for favour.*

and the general likeness of l. 258 ff. with C-G. 44 b-45 a, as above noted. Nor do the verse tests reveal any break in the continuity of the Scene; the figures for the first part are: double endings, 45 per cent.; run-on lines, 33 per cent.—for the second part: double endings, 36 per cent.; run-on lines, 36 per cent.

Passing to the Second Act, we discover at once a new manner of expression, in which the sentence has a looser structure, the verse a quicker *tempo*, the poetry a striving now and again for a note of lyric beauty which, although satisfactorily achieved in but few lines, is by Massinger's verse not even attempted. A liberal sprinkling of rhymes appears. The Scene is a trifle more vividly conceived; the emotions have a somewhat more genuine ring. Simultaneously, resemblances to the phraseology of Massinger's other plays become infrequent; *and, to increase the wonder*, is almost the only reminder of him in the whole of Scene i. On the other hand we must not expect to find in the work of Field the same large number of recognizable expressions as mark that of Massinger; for he was not nearly so given to repeating himself, nor are there many of his plays extant from which to garner parallels. The figure of speech with which Charalois opens his funeral address [Field shows a great predilection for "aqueous" similes and metaphors], the liberal use of oaths (*'Slid, 'Slight*),

a reference (l. 137) to the Bermudas (also mentioned in *Amends for Ladies*: M. 427), and the comparison to the oak and pine (ll. 119-121—cf. a Field Scene of *The Queen of Corinth*: D. V, 436-7) are the only specific minutia to which a finger can be pointed. The verse analysis testifies similarly to a different author from that of Act I, double endings being 20 per cent., run-on lines 15 per cent.—figures which are quite normal to Field.

To the actor-dramatist may be set down the prose of II, ii without question. Massinger practically never uses prose, which is liberally employed by Field, as is the almost indistinguishable prose-or-verse by which a transition is made from one medium to the other. The dialogue between Beaumelle and her maids is strikingly like that between two "gentlewomen" in *The Knight of Malta*, I, ii—a Scene generally recognized as by his hand; the visit of Novall Junior which follows is like a page out of his earlier comedies. Notable resemblances are ll. 177-8, *Uds-light! my lord, one of the purls of your band is, without all discipline, fallen out of his rank. with I have seen him sit discontented a whole play because one of the purls of his band was fallen out of his reach to order again.* (*Amends for Ladies*, M. 455); and l. 104, *they skip into my lord's cast skins some twice a year, with and then my lord (like a snake) casts a suite every quarter, which I slip into:* (*Woman is a Weathercock*, M. 374). The song, after l. 131, recalls that in *Amends for Ladies*, M. 465.

Of the verse which follows, most of the observations made in regard to the preceding Scene are applicable. The comic touch in the midst of Romont's tirade (ll. 174-206) against old Novall, when the vehemence of his indignation leads him to seek at every breath the epithet of a different beast for his foe, is surely Field's, not Massinger's. A Field scene of *The Queen of Corinth*, D. V, 438, parallels with its *Thou a gentleman! thou an ass*, the construction of l. 276, while there too is duplicated the *true-love knots* of l. 314, though in a rather grotesque connection. The verse tests are confirmative of Field: 21 per cent. double endings; 19 per cent. run-on lines. While a few resemblances to phrases occurring somewhere in the works of Massinger can be marked here and there in the 355 lines of the Scene, they are not such as would demand consideration, nor are more numerous than sheer chance would yield in the case of a writer so prolific as



the "stage-poet." The parallel between ll. 284-297 and a passage from *The Unnatural Combat* is pointed out under the head of DATE, and one of several possible explanations for this coincidence is there offered. These lines in *The Fatal Dowry* are as unmistakably Field's as any verse in the entire play; their short, abruptly broken periods and their rapid flow are as characteristic of him as the style of their analogue in *The Unnatural Combat* is patently Massingerian.

Act III presents a more difficult problem. It will be noted that Fleay and Boyle alike declare that its single long Scene is divided between the two authors, but are unable to agree as to the point of division. The first 316 lines are beyond question the work of Massinger. The tilt between Romont and Beaumelle is conducted with that flood of rhetorical vituperation by which he customarily attempts to delineate passion; in no portion of the play is his diction and sentence-structure more marked; and the parallels to passages elsewhere in his works reappear with redoubled profusion. Indeed, they become too numerous for complete citation; let it suffice to refer ll. 43-4 to D. III, 477; ll. 53-4 to C-G. 173 a; ll. 80-3 to D. III, 481; l. 104 to C-G. 532 a; l. 116 to C-G. 146 b; ll. 117-8 to D. VI, 294 and D. VI, 410; ll. 232-5 to C-G. 307 a, also to 475 b, and to D. VIII, 406; while the phrase, *Meet with an ill construction* (l. 238) is a common one with Massinger (cf. C-G. 76 a, 141 b, 193 b, 225 b, 339 b), as are such ironic observations as the *Why, 'tis exceeding well* of l. 293 (cf., e. g., 175 b). This part of the Scene contains 45 per cent. double endings and 36 per cent. run-on lines.

The last 161 lines of the Act with scarcely less certainty can be established as Field's, though on a first reading one might imagine, from the wordiness of the vehement dialogue and the rather high ratio (19:11) of speeches ending in mid-line, that the hand of Massinger continues throughout. But the closest examination no longer will reveal traces of that playwright's distinctive handiwork, while a ratio of 17 per cent. for double endings and 28 per cent. for run-on lines, the introduction of rhyme, the oaths, and the change from the previous full-flowing declamation to shorter, more abrupt periods are vouchers that this part of the Scene is from the pen of the actor-dramatist. We can scarcely imagine

the ponderous-styled Massinger writing anything so easy and rapid as

*I'll die first.  
Farewell; continue merry, and high heaven  
Keep your wife chaste.*

Such phrases as *So I not heard them* (l. 352) and *Like George a-horseback* (l. 433) in the loose structure of the one and the slangy scurrility of the other, exhibit no kinship to his manner; l. 373, *They are fools that judge me by my outward seeming* recalls a Field passage in *The Queen of Corinth* (D. V, 444) *They are fools that hold them dignified by blood*. There is here and there, moreover, a certain violence of expression, a compressed over-trenchancy of phrase, that brings to mind the rant of the early Elizabethans, and is found among the Jacobean only in the work of Rowley, Beaumont, and Field. For the last named, this is notably exemplified in the opening soliloquy of *The Knight of Malta*; we cannot but recognize the same touch here in ll. 386-8:

*Thou dost strike  
A deathful coldness to my heart's high heat,  
And shrink'st my liver like the calenture.*

The *Something I must do*, which concludes the Act, is repeatedly paralleled in Massinger's plays, but a similar indefinite resolve is expressed in *Woman is a Weathercock* (M. 363), and it consequently cannot be adduced as evidence of his hand. Immediately above, however (ll. 494-6), we encounter, in the allusion to the Italian and Dutch temperaments, a thought twice echoed by the "stage-poet" in plays of not greatly later date, *The Duke of Milan* and *The Little French Lawyer* (C-G. 90 a; D. III, 505). It may represent an interpolation by Massinger; it may be merely that this rather striking conclusion to the climatic speech of his collaborator's scene so fixed itself on his mind as to crop out afterwards in his own productions.

In the short disputed passage (ll. 317-343) which separates what is undoubtedly Massinger's from what is undoubtedly Field's, it would appear that both playwrights had a hand. The *'Sdeath* and *Gads me!*, the play upon the word *currier*, and the

phrase, *I shall be with you suddenly* (cf. *Q. of Cor. D. V.*, 467) speak for Field; while Massinger, on the other hand, parallels

*His back*

*Appears to me as it would tire a beadle;*

with

*A man of resolution, whose shoulders*

*Are of themselves armour of proof, against*

*A bastinado, and will tire ten beadles.*—C-G. 186 b;

and the phrase "to sit down with a disgrace" occurs something like a dozen times on his pages, especially frequently in the collaborated plays—that is to say, in the earlier period of his work, to which *The Fatal Dowry* belongs. It is probable, and not unnatural, that the labors of the partners in composition overlapped on this bit of the Scene, but metrical analysis claims with as much certainty as can attach to this test in the case of so short a passage that it is substantially Massinger's, and should go rather with what precedes than with what comes after it, the verse being all one piece with that of the former section. It has 37 per cent. double endings and 41 per cent. run-on lines.

IV, i, opens with a prose passage for all the world like that of *Woman is a Weathercock*, I, ii, with its picture of the dandy, his parasites, and the pert page who forms a sort of chorus with his caustic *asides*; and writes itself down indisputably as by the same author. Novall Junior and his coterie appear here as in their former presentation in II, ii. We have again the same racy comedy, the same faltering of the vehicle between verse and prose (see ll. 61-8; 137-153). After the clearing of the stage of all save Romont and young Novall, uninterrupted verse ensues, which, despite a rather notable parallel in *The Beggars' Bush*, D. IX, 9 to l. 174, is evidently Field's also. An analogue of ll. 180-1 is discoverable in *Amends for Ladies* (M. 421), as is of the reference (l. 197) to "fairies' treasure" in *Woman is a Weathercock* (M. 344). Novall's exclamation (l. 182), *Pox on this gun!* and his retort (l. 201), *Good devil to your roguiship!* are Fieldian, and the entire passage possesses a vigor and an easy naturalness which declare his authorship. It is not improbable, however, that his contribution ends with the fragmentary l. 207, and that the remaining four lines of the Scene are a Massinger

tag. *The Maid of Honour* (C-G. 28 a) furnishes a striking parallel for ll. 208-9, while for 210-1 cf. C-G. 192 a. The metrical tests for IV, i, confirm Field: 22 per cent. double endings; 22 per cent. run-on lines.

With the next Scene the hand of Massinger is once more in evidence with all its accustomed manifestations. One interested in his duplication of characteristic phrasing may refer for comparison ll. 13-4 to C-G. 299 b; l. 17 to C-G. 241 a; ll. 24-6 to C-G. 547 b; ll. 29-30 to C-G. 425 b; l. 57 to C-G. 41 b, 70 b; l. 94 to C-G. 182 b. The Scene contains 32 per cent. double endings and 37 per cent. run-on lines. The authorship of its two songs is less certain. Field was more given to song-writing than was Massinger, and the second of this pair is reminiscent in its conception of the Grace Seldom episode in *Amends for Ladies* (II, i).

The short IV, iii is by Massinger. In evidence of him are its 36 per cent. of double endings and 55 per cent. of run-on lines, its involved sentence structure, and the familiar phrasing which makes itself manifest even in so brief a passage (e. g.: *To play the parasite*, l. 7—cf. V, iii, 78 and C-G. 334 b. Cf. also ll. 9-10 with D. III, 476; and l. 22 with C-G. 40 b, 153 a, 262 b.).

The same dramatist's work continues through the last Scene of the Act. This, the emotional climax of the play, representing a quasi-judicial procedure, affords him abundant opportunity for fervid moralizing and speech-making, of which he takes advantage most typically. Massinger commonplaces are l. 29, *Made shipwreck of your faith* (cf. C-G. 55 b, 235 a, 414 b); l. 56, *In the forbidden labyrinth of lust* (cf. C-G. 298 b); l. 89, *Angels guard me!* (cf. C-G. 59 b, 475 b); l. 118-9, *and yield myself Most miserably guilty* (cf. C-G. 61 b, 66 b, 130 a; D. VI, 354); etc.; while within a year or so of the time when he wrote referring to "those famed matrons" (l. 70), he expatiated upon them in detail (see *The Virgin Martyr*, C-G. 33 a). Yet more specific parallels may be found: for l. 63 cf. C-G. 179 a; ll. 76-7, cf. C-G. 28 a; l. 78, cf. C-G. 32 b; ll. 162-3, cf. C-G. 3 b, in a passage wherein there is a certain similarity of situation; l. 177, cf. D. IX, 7. Were any further confirmation needed for Massinger's authorship, the metrical tests would supply it, with their 36 per cent. double endings and 34 per cent. run-on lines.

The most cursory reading of V, i is sufficient to establish the

conviction that its author is not identical with that of the earlier comic passages—is not Field, but Massinger. The humor, such as it is, is of a graver, more restrained sort—satiric rather than burlesque; it has lost lightness and verve, and approaches to high-comedy and even to moralizing. One feels that the confession of the tailor-gallant is no mere fun-making device, but a caustic attack upon social conditions against which the writer nurtured a grudge. Massingerian are such expressions as *And now I think on't better* (l. 77—cf. C-G. 57 b, 468 a, 615 a; D. XI, 28), and *use a conscience* (l. 90—cf. C-G. 444 a, 453 a), while the metrical evidence of 36 per cent. double endings and 29 per cent. run-on lines fortifies a case concerning which all commentators are in agreement. But despite the unanimity of critical opinion hitherto, I am not sure that Field did not contribute a minor touch here and there to the Scene. Such contribution, if a fact, must have been small, for the Massinger flavor is unmistakable throughout; yet in the *Plague on't!* and the *'Slid!*, in the play upon words (ll. 13-4, 20-1, 44), which is rare with Massinger and common with Field, in the line, *I only know [thee] now to hate thee deadly:* (cf. *Amends for Ladies*, M. 421: *I never more Will hear or see thee, but will hate thee deadly.*), we may, perhaps, detect a hint of his hand.

Scene ii (which in the Quarto ends with the reconciliation of Charalois and Romont, the entry of Du Croy, Charmi, etc. being marked as the beginning of a third Scene, though the place is unchanged and the action continuous, wherefore modern editors disregard the Quarto's division and count Scene ii as including all the remainder of the Act) presents the usual distinctive earmarks of a Massinger passage. The last third of it, however (ll. 80-121), has, on account of the presence of several rhymes, been commonly assigned to Field. No doubt his hand is here discernable; l. 118, *mark'd me out the way how to defend it*, is scarcely a Massinger construction either; but I cannot think Field's presence here more than that of a reviser, just as in the latter half of I, ii. The language remains more Massinger's than Field's; and while the passage is over-short for metrical tests to be decisive, the 39 per cent. of double endings and 35 per cent. of run-on lines which it yields (for the earlier part of the Scene the figures are respectively 28 per cent. and 35 per

cent.) are corroborative of Massinger's authorship. Cf. also ll. 96-8 with this from *The Renegado* (C-G. 157 a):

*This applause  
Confirm'd in your allowance, joys me more  
Than if a thousand full-cramm'd theatres  
Should clap their eager hands.*

Of the final Scene, V, iii, little need be said. It brings before us again a court-room, with another trial, and continues the manner of its predecessor, I, ii, as only Massinger can. His customary formulae, *stand bound, play the parasite*, etc., are here; characteristic too are his opposition of *wanton heat* and *lawful fires* (ll. 141-2—cf. C-G. 37 b; D. V. 476), while further material for comparison may be found in ll. 95-6 with *Respect, wealth, favour, the whole world for a dowry* of *The Virgin Martyr* (C-G. 6 b), and in ll. 165-7:

Char. *You must find other proofs to strengthen these  
But mere presumptions.*  
Du Croy *Or we shall hardly  
Allow your innocence.*

with C-G. 39 a and b:

*You must produce  
Reasons of more validity and weight  
To plead in your defence, or we shall hardly  
Conclude you innocent.*

The last passage cited for comparison also exhibits another feature normal to the work of this dramatist: the splitting of an observation, frequently a single sentence, between two speakers; so ll. 38-9, and again, l. 59. The Scene and play are rounded off with the pointing of a moral, so indispensable to Massinger's satisfaction.

To sum up, therefore, disregarding for practical purposes the slight touches of Field in I, ii, ll. 146-*end*; III, i, ll. 317-343; V, ii, ll. 80-*end*; and perhaps in V, i;—and the apparent Massinger touches in IV, i, and possibly at one or two other points in the Field Scenes, we may divide the play as follows:

MASSINGER: I; III, ll. 1-343; IV, ii, iii, iv; V.

FIELD: II; III, ll. 344-*end*; IV, i.

A metrical analysis of the play is appended in tabular form, in which I have computed separately the figures for each portion of any Scene on which there has been a question. It will be noted that the single simple test of the mid-line speech-ending would,

Scene	Prose Lines	Verses Lines	Double Endings	Per Cent.	Run-on Lines	Per Cent.	Fragmentary Lines	Rhymed Lines	Speeches Ending in Mid-line	Speeches Ending with Line	Author
I, i . . . . .	—	196	64	33	56	29	1	2	42	22	Massinger
I, ii (a) . . .	—	145	64	45	48	33	1	2	25	14	Massinger
I, ii (b) . . .	—	158	57	36	57	36	0	12	30	16	Massinger (Field revision)
II, i . . . . .	—	145	29	20	22	15	4	16	19	17	Field
II, ii . . . . .	82	273	57	21	52	19	9	12	47	50	Field
III, i (a) . . .	—	316	142	45	114	36	1	2	67	29	Massinger
III, i (b) . . .	—	27	10	37	11	41	3	0	13	6	Massinger (with Field ?)
III, i (c) . . .	—	161	28	17	45	28	0	10	19	11	Field
IV, i . . . . .	88	124	27	22	27	22	4	6	26	24	Field
IV, ii . . . . .	—	104	33	32	38	37	2	2	24	10	Massinger
IV, iii . . . . .	—	22	8	36	12	55	0	0	3	1	Massinger
IV, iv . . . . .	—	195	71	36	67	34	0	6	32	8	Massinger
V, i . . . . .	—	107	38	36	31	29	1	2	16	5	Massinger
V, ii (a) . . .	—	80	22	28	27	34	0	2	17	2	Massinger
V, ii (b) . . .	—	41	15	37	14	35	0	8	3	3	Massinger (Field revision)
V, iii . . . . .	—	229	98	43	50	22	0	4	34	19	Massinger

with but two exceptions—one (III, i, c) doubtful, and the other (V, ii, b) too short a passage to afford a fair test—have made a clean-cut and correct determination of authorship in every case.

#### CRITICAL ESTIMATE

No less an authority than Swinburne has pronounced *The Fatal Dowry* the finest tragedy in the Massinger corpus. Certainly it would be the most formidable rival of *The Duke of Milan* for that distinction. It occupies an anomalous position among the works of the "stage poet." His dramas are, as a rule, strongest in construction; he went at play-making like a skillful architect, and put together and moulded his material with steady hand. They are likely to be weakest in characterization. Massinger could not get inside his figures and endow them with the breath of life; they remain stony shapes chiseled in severely angular and conventional lines, like some old Egyptian bas-

relief. But *The Fatal Dowry* is strong in characterization and defective in construction.

The structural fault is less surprising when it is ascertained to be fundamental—inevitable in the theme. The play breaks in the middle: it is really composed of two stories; the first two Acts present and resolve one action, while another, hitherto barely presaged, occupies the last three, and is the proper story of the Fatal Dowry. Charalois' self-immolation for the corpse of his heroic father, and his rescue and reward by the great-hearted Rochfort, form a little play in themselves—a brief but stately tragi-comedy, which is followed by a tense drama of intrigue and retribution, of adultery and avenged honor—itself complete in itself, for which we are prepared in the first two Acts only by one figure, whose potentialities for disaster are ominous if not obvious:—Beaumelle, of whom more later. This plot-building by *enjambment* precludes the slow, steady mounting of suspense from the initial moment and inexorable gathering of doom which are manifested in a well-conceived tragedy; yet crude, amorphous, inorganic as it may seem—defying, as it does, unity of action—like as it is to the earliest Elizabethan plays, which were concerned with a single career rather than a single theme, it would appear inevitably necessary, if a maximum effect is to be gained from the given plot-material. Just as Wagner found it impossible to do justice to the story of Siegfried without first presenting that of Siegmund and Sieglinde, so the experiment of Rowe (who in re-working the story for *The Fair Penitent* relegated to expository dialogue the narration of what corresponds to the first two Acts of *The Fatal Dowry*) sadly demonstrated that unless the reader or audience actually sees, and not merely hears about, Charalois' previous devotion, Rochfort's generosity, and Romont's loyalty, these characters do not attract to themselves a full measure of sympathy, and the story of their later vicissitudes is somehow unconvincing and falls flat.

Massinger and Field accepted frankly the structural awkwardness of their plot as they had fashioned or found it. Making, apparently, no attempt to obviate its essential duality, they went to work in the most straightforward manner, and achieved, thanks in no small measure to that same resolute directness of approach, a drama of so naturalistic a tone as half to redeem its



want of unity. *The Fatal Dowry* is not an Aristotelian tragedy with a definite beginning, middle, and end—it is rather a cross-section of life. The unconventionality and vitality of such a production are startling, and obtain a high degree of verisimilitude.

Both authors seem to have been themselves inspired by their virile theme to give to it their best work. The stately, somewhat monotonous verse of Massinger, which never loses dignity and is so incapable of expressing climaxes of passion, is once or twice almost forgotten, or else rises to a majesty which transfigures it. Though forensic declamation was always the especial forte of this dramatist, he literally out-did himself in his management of the suit for the dead Marshal's body. The elaborate rhetoric of Charmi, checked by the stern harshness of Novall Senior, the indignant outburst of Romont, and the sad, yet noble calmness of Charalois' speech in which he presses the forlorn alternative, succeed one another with striking contrast; the very flow of the verse changes with the speaker in a manner which recalls the wonderful employment of this device by Shakespeare, as, for example, in the First Act of *Othello*. In the final Scene of Act IV, Massinger achieves a climax worthy of Fletcher himself;—save, perhaps, the *denouement* of *A New Way to Pay Old Debts*, and the great scene in *The Duke of Milan* in which Sforza's faith in his Duchess is broken down by aspersion after aspersion, until he slays her, only to learn the terrible truth one instant later, it is the most dramatic situation he ever worked up. Field, too, seems to have been on his mettle: his verse is more trenchant, his care greater than in his two earlier comedies; the lines (II, i, 126-7)

*My root is earthed, and I a desolate branch  
Left scattered in the highway of the world,*

touch the high-water mark of his poetic endeavor.

Blemishes, indeed, are not unapparent. The episodic first Scene of Act V is a rather stupid piece of pseudo-comedy by Massinger, which serves no function adequate to justify its existence, while it interrupts the thread of the main story at a point where its culminating intensity does not, of right, permit such a diversion. Gifford in commenting upon this Scene makes

the amazing pronouncement that it serves "to prove how differently the comic part of this drama would have appeared, if the whole had fortunately fallen into the hands of Massinger." Surely never was criticism more fatuous.

But the most serious—indeed, the outstanding—defect of the play is the easy readiness of Charalois to break with Romont. The calm, unregretful placidity with which he untwists the long web of friendship with a man who has stood by him through weal and woe, who has courted a prison's chains for his sake, shocks us, and repels us with its flinty self-sufficiency. It is not that we know him to be wrong and Romont to be right; suppose the high faith of Charalois in Beaumelle to be entirely justified and the charge of Romont to be as groundless as it is wildly delivered and unconvincing, yet there is no excuse for the *immediacy* with which, on the first revelation of what he himself has demanded to know, the hero rejects, along with the report of his friend, the friend himself, whose aim could have been only his best interest. For the fault lies not in the situation, which is sound, but in its over-hasty development. A little more length to the scene, a few more speeches to either participant in the dialogue, a little longer and more vituperative insistence on the part of Romont in the face of Charalois' warnings that he has gone far enough, and the quarrel would have been thoroughly realized and developed. As it is, it comes on insufficient provocation; the hero, at the moment when he should excite regret and sympathy because of his blind, mistaken trust in his unworthy wife, excites rather indignation; the later words of Romont with which he justifies his unshaken loyalty to his comrade turn back the mind perforce to that comrade's lack of loyalty to *him*, and unwittingly ring out as a judgment upon Charalois:

*That friendship's raised on sand,  
Which every sudden gust of discontent,  
Or flowing of our passions can change,  
As if it ne'er had been:—*

The faulty passage, it will be noted upon reference to the analysis of shares in collaboration, is by the hand of Field. Unconvincing precipitancy in the conduct of situations marks his work elsewhere, notably in the *Amends for Ladies*.

As it has already been said, the strongest feature of the play is its characterization. Almost every figure is, if not an individual, at least a type so vitalized as to appear to take on life. One or two touches, to be sure, of conventional Massingerian habits of thought still cling about them; even the noblest cannot entirely forget to consider how their conduct will pose them before the eyes of the world and posterity. But apart from such slight occasional lapses, they may truthfully be said to speak and move quite in the manner of real men and women.

The hero, Charalois, is drawn as of a gentle, meditative, temperate, and self-possessed disposition, in strong and effective contrast to his friend. Though his military exploits are spoken of with admiration, and Romont testifies that he can "pursue a foe like lightning," he betrays a certain readiness to yield to discouragement scarce to be expected in the son of the great general. In consequence of these facts, he has been described by some (notably Cunningham, in his Edition of Gifford, Introduction, p. xiii;—cf. also Phelan, p. 61; and Beck, pp. 22-3) as "a Hamlet whose mind has not yet been sicklied o'er by the pale cast of thought," and his long silence at the opening of Act I is compared to that of the Danish Prince on his first appearance. But, in reality, excess of pride is the chief reason of Charalois' backwardness on this occasion, and thereafter he acts promptly and efficiently always. The same over-sensitive pride continues to manifest itself throughout the play—when he is confronted with Rochfort's generosity; when he finds (III, i, 365 ff.) that it is he who is the object of the jests of Novall Junior and his satellites (though scarce a breath earlier he has chided Romont for noticing the yapping of such petty curs); and in the vicissitudes of the catastrophe and its consequences. A harmonious twin-birth with his pride, at once proceeding from it, bound up with it, and on occasion over-weighing its scruples, is an extreme punctiliousness at every turn to the dictates of that peculiarly Spanish imperative, "the point of honor,"—a consideration so prominent throughout the play as to have convinced many critics that the source of the story, although still undiscovered, must have been Spanish. These two traits—pride and an adherence to "the point of honor," are almost invariably the mainsprings of Charalois' conduct. His pride holds him back from suppli-

cating in behalf of his father the clemency of the unworthy ministers of the law, till he is persuaded by Romont that honor not only permits but requires that he do so; he feels that honor demands that he sacrifice himself to secure his father's burial, and he does it; that honor demands that he put away his friend in loyalty to his wife, and he does it; that honor demands that he slay the adulteress—and he does it; he even consents to lay bare the details of his ignominious wrong before the eyes of men, because he is brought to believe that "the point of honor" calls for a justification of his course and the holding of it up as an example to the world. It is a striking and consistent portrait—how unlike the usual conventionally noble hero of romantic drama!

Romont, however, is the finest figure of the play. He draws to himself rather more than his share of interest and sympathy, to the detriment of the protagonist. Of a type common enough on the stage of that day—the bluff, loyal soldier-friend of the hero—he is yet so thoroughly individualized that we can discuss him and calculate what he will do in given situations, even as with a character of Shakespeare's. The portrait suffers from no jarring inconsistencies; almost his every utterance is absolutely in part, and adds its touch to round out our conception of him. His negligence of his personal appearance, his quick temper, his impulsiveness, his violence, his lack of restraint, his fierce, uncompromising honesty, his devotion to the "grave General dead" and his unshaken fidelity to the living son, his flashes of unexpected tenderness, his homage for the reverend virtue of Rochfort—a sort of child-like awe for what he knows is finer if not of truer metal than his own rough spirit, his ill-disguised scorn for Novall Junior and his creatures, "those dogs in doublets," his lack of tact which unfits him for effective service in the delicate task of preserving Beaumelle's honor, and dooms his story to Charalois to disbelief and resentment, his prompt, fearless decisiveness of action, the tumultuous flood of nervous and at times eloquent speech which pours from his lips when he is aroused, yet dies in his throat when he is lashed by a woman's tongue—a flood of speech which is most torrential when the situation is most doubtful or hopeless of good issue, but which gives place to a self-possessed terseness when he is quite sure of

his ground:—all go to give detail and reality to a character at once amazingly alive and irresistibly attractive. "Romont is one of the noblest of all Massinger's men," says Swinburne, "and Shakespeare has hardly drawn noble men more nobly than Massinger." To find a parallel creation who can over-match him in vigor of presentation and theatrical efficiency, we must go back to the Melantius of Beaumont and Fletcher. These two characters represent the ultimate elaborations of the stock figure of the faithful friend and blunt soldier; Melantius is the supreme romantic, Romont the supreme realistic, development of the type.

Yet though Romont is the most compelling of the *dramatis personae*, into none does Massinger enter more thoroughly than the noble figure of Rochfort. Utter devotion to virtue, to which he had paid a life-long fidelity, is the key-note of the nature of the aged Premier President, and accordingly in him the deep-seated ethical seriousness of the "stage-poet" found a congenial expression. A statelier dignity is wont to echo in his lines than in the utterance of any other character; they breathe an exalted calm, a graciousness, a grave courtesy, as though the very spirit of their speaker had entered them.

An inability to judge the character of others was his great weakness—a weakness which he himself realized, for he called upon Beaumont to confirm the one strikingly sure, true appraisal which he exhibited, his admiration for Charalois. Characteristically, this weakness seems to have taken the form of a too-generous estimate of his fellows. This caused him to bestow his vacated office upon the harsh and unjust Novall, and to be blind to the disposition of his daughter, and the danger that lay in her intimacy with Novall Junior. But if his kindly nature saw the better side of even that contemptible young man, he at least understood him well enough not to take him at all seriously as a suitor for Beaumelle's hand.

Of the Novalls, father and son, there is a much briefer presentation. Yet even so, in the case of old Novall we have as masterly a sketch as in Romont a detailed study. His every word is eloquent of his stern, not to say *mean*, nature—curt and severe towards others, all prejudice where he himself is concerned, inexorably malevolent against those who incur his animosity. Yet it never enters his head to seek the satisfaction of his hate in

any way save through the law; for example, he does not seize upon, or even think seriously of, Pontalier's proffer of private vengeance; the law is his sphere—he will abuse it to his advantage, if he can, but he will not go outside of it. He is, in other words, the Official Bureaucrat *par excellence*, and his enmity against the martial house of the Charaloises and the rigor with which he is said to “cross every deserved soldier and scholar,” and, on the other hand, the detestation in which Romont holds him, are manifestations of the feud of type against type. It has been suggested that the especial fervor with which he is devoted to execration argues a prototype in actual life, and that in him is to be recognized Sir Edward Coke, notorious for the savage vindictiveness of his conduct towards Sir Walter Raleigh.

Novall Junior, the cowardly, foppish, and unscrupulous gallant, though a flimsy personality, affords once or twice, in the Fieldian prose, rather good humor: e. g.—

*Nay, o' my soul, 'tis so; what fouler object in the world, than to see a young, fair, handsome beauty unhandsomely dighted, and incongruently accoutred? or a hopeful chevalier unmethodically appointed in the external ornaments of nature? For, even as the index tells us the contents of stories, and directs to the particular chapters, even so does the outward habit and superficial order of garments (in man or woman) give us a taste of the spirit, and demonstratively point (as it were a manual note from the margin) all the internal quality and habiliment of the soul; and there cannot be a more evident, palpable, gross manifestation of poor, degenerate, dunghilly blood and breeding, than a rude, unpolished, disordered, and slovenly outside. (IV, i, 48-60.)*

Of the remaining characters, only two call for especial notice. The three Creditors are a blemish upon the otherwise striking verisimilitude of the play; they are impossible, inhuman monsters of greed and relentlessness, who serve as vehicles for a kind of grotesque comedy. A personal rancour on the part of the authors may have been responsible for this presentation, as it is probable that they themselves had had none-too-pleasant experiences with money-lenders. Pontalier, however, is very well conceived and skillfully executed. Occupying a relation to Novall Junior quite

similar to that of Romont to Charalois, he is yet differentiated from his parallel, while at the same time he is kept free from any taint of the despicableness and fawning servility which are chiefly prominent in the parasites of the vicious and feather-brained young lord. There is something really pathetic about this brave, honorable soldier, committed to the defense of an unworthy benefactor, ranged on the side of wrong against right, by his very best qualities: his noble sense of gratitude, his loyalty, his devotion to what he conceives to be his duty. It will be observed that he never joins with the rest of the group about Novall Junior in their jibes against Charalois and Romont.

The last figure for consideration, and not the least important, is Beaumelle. So general has been the misconception of her character that it calls for a more detailed analysis than has been accorded to the other personages of the drama, or than the place she occupies might appear to warrant. That place, indeed, is not a striking one; she is scarce more than a character of second rank, appearing in but few scenes and speaking not many lines. Yet her part in the story is one of such potentialities that in Rowe's version of the same theme her analogue becomes the central figure, and even in *The Fatal Dowry* a failure to understand her has probably been at the bottom of most of the less favorable judgments that have been passed upon the play, while those critics who appraise it higher yet acknowledge her to be its one outstanding defect. "*The Fatal Dowry*," says Saintsbury (*Hist. Eng. Lit.*, vol. ii, p. 400) ". . . is . . . injured by the unattractive character of the light-of-love Beaumelle before her repentance (Massinger never could draw a woman)." She is declared by Swinburne to be "too thinly and feebly drawn to attract even the conventional and theatrical sympathy which Fletcher might have excited for a frail and penitent heroine: and the almost farcical insignificance and baseness of her paramour would suffice to degrade his not involuntary victim beneath the level of any serious interest or pity." If these and similar pronouncements were well founded, the play as a cross-section of life would have the great weakness of being unconvincing at a very vital point. A study of the text, however, will discover Beaumelle to be portrayed, in the brief compass of her appearance, in no wise inadequately, but rather, if anything, somewhat beyond

the requirements of her dramatic function—will reveal her, not, indeed, a personage of heroic proportions and qualities, but a young woman of considerable naturalness, plausibility, and realistic convincingness.

The trouble has probably been that the critics of Beaumelle have passed hastily over the very scurrilous prose scene in which she first appears. They have looked on this passage as merely a piece of Fieldian low-comedy, a coarse bit of buffoonery which pretends to no function save that of humor, and can sustain not even this pretense. Nothing can be further from the truth. The passage *is* a piece of coarse comedy such as Field had an overfondness for writing; but it is something more; in reality, a proper understanding of the heroine is conditioned upon it.

Beaumelle is a young girl whose mother, we may infer, has long been dead. The cares of the bench have been too great to allow her father time for much personal supervision of her; she has had for associates her two maids, and of these she not unnaturally finds the gay and witty, but thoroughly depraved, Bellapert the more congenial, and adopts her as her mentor and confidant. She is in love, after a fashion—caught, like the impressionable, uncritical girl she is, by the fair exterior of a young magnificent, whose elegant dress and courtly show of devotion quite blind her to his real worthlessness—and there is scant likelihood of her getting the man who has charmed her fancy. Her disposition is high-spirited and wayward, but not deliberately vicious; she has certain hazily defined ideals, mingled with the same romantic mist through which the superfine dandy, Novall, appears in her eyes a very Prince Charming; she “would meet love and marriage both at once”; she desires to preserve her honor. She has ideals, but she doubts their tangibility; she is in an unsettled state of mind, questioning the fundamentals of conduct and social relationships, in much need of good counsel. In that perilous mood she talks with Bellapert—Bellapert, the dearest cabinet of her secrets—Bellapert, the bribed instrument of Novall—and is told by that worldly-wise wench that marriage almost never unites with love, but must be used as a cloak for it; that honor is a foolish fancy; that a husband is a master to be outwitted and despised. The shaft sinks home all too surely; a



visit at that very moment by Beaumelle's lover completes the conquest, when her father interrupts their *tete-a-tete*—her father, who comes with the announcement that she must marry a man whom she does not even know! In the scene where the destined bride and groom are brought face to face, she stands throughout in stony silence quite as eloquent as the more famous speechlessness of Charalois at the beginning of the play. She has ever been "handmaid" to her father's will; she realizes all her hopes and fortunes "have reference to his liking;" and now she obeys, with the bitter thought in her heart that Fate, in denying her her will, has wronged Love itself (II, ii, 154); only when Charalois turns to her with a direct question, "Fair Beaumelle, can you love me?" does she utter a word—then from her lips a brief, desperate, "Yes, my lord"—and a moment later (II, ii, 315) she is weeping silently. (Her answer was honest in as far as she really did mean to give to the man chosen for her husband her duty with her hand.) Then the voice of the tempter whispers in her ear, she feels its tug at her heart, and with a cry, "Oh, servant!—Virtue strengthen me!" she hurries from the room. That is the situation at the end of the Second Act and first part of the play; an appreciation of its significance makes the connection with what follows less arbitrary and inorganic.

When Beaumelle next appears, in the Third Act, there has been a change. We may imagine that she has had time to ponder those cynical maxims of Bellapert on the natural course of romance. Her union has been unwilling; she does not care for her husband; Novall appeals to her as much as ever: with her eyes open, she deliberately chooses the path of sin—because the enforced marriage which shattered her hopes must needs appear to her the final demonstration of the correctness of her maid's contention (towards which she was already inclining) that she has been foolishly impractical to dream of the satisfaction of her heart's wish through wedlock, but that it is by secret amour that love must be, and is wont to be, enjoyed.

It may not be unreasonable to regard the resourcefulness and effrontery which characterize her throughout the Third Act as the result of a sort of mental intoxication, into which she has been lifted by her reckless resolve and the consciousness of danger; at any rate she now shows herself altogether too much

for Romont; she finds a shrewdness and an eloquence that carry her triumphant to the consummation of her desire. When discovery ensues, her paramour is slain, and she herself is haled to die, she is overcome—abruptly and, one might say, strangely—with remorse and penitence. But it is not at all by one of those theatrically convenient but psychologically absurd changes of heart so frequent in the drama of that period; nothing, indeed, could be more true to life. Novall Junior, coward and fop that he was, has hitherto always borne himself in lordly fashion before her, even when they were surprised by Romont; but now at last she beholds him stripped to the shivering abjectness of his contemptible soul, that she may observe his baseness. She sees him cowed and beaten and slain, while Charalois (whom she never knew before their marriage nor has tried to understand in the brief period of their wedlock) with his outraged honor and irresistible prowess assumes to her eyes the proportions of a hero; and with her girl's romanticism<sup>10</sup> of nature, she bows down and worships him. It is somewhat the same note that is struck by Thackeray in the similar situation where Rawdon Crawley, returning home unexpectedly, finds his wife with Lord Steyne and knocks the man down.

*It was all done before Rebecca could interpose. She stood there trembling before him. She admired her husband, strong, brave, victorious.*

So it was with Beaumelle. Except for one brief cry of "Undone for ever!" she utters no word from the moment of the surprise to the end of the Scene. She hangs back, shrinking, for a moment, when ordered into the coach with the dead body of her partner in guilt. "Come," says Charalois, in terrible jest, "you have taught me to say, you must and shall. . . . You are but to keep him company you love—" and she obeys mutely.

Thus, all contriteness, Beaumelle goes to her fate. It should be observed how, even at the last, her tendency to romantic idealization vehemently asserts itself; she looks fondly back (IV, iv,

<sup>10</sup> This is all the more rampant in that it is suddenly called back into activity after its period of obscurity while she yielded herself to a cynical, immoral opportunism, and is now brought, by a fearful shock, to confront higher ethical values and real manhood. For this time she is given not a Novall but a Charalois to idealize.

53) to an imagined time, which never really existed, when she was "good" and "a part of" Charalois, made one with him through the virtuous harmony of their minds!—no voice is more unflinching than her own to pronounce her doom as both righteous and necessary, and she conceives herself to climb, by her ecstatic welcoming of death, into the company of the ancient heroines and martyrs. In its realism of the commonplace and its slightly ironic conception, it is the outline drawing of a character that might have received elaborate portraiture at the hands of Flaubert.

Whether we are to regard this consistent "study in little" as a deliberate piece of work on the part of the authors, must remain a matter of opinion. There is no similar figure elsewhere in the dramatic output of Massinger, nor any quite so minutely conceived within the same number of speech-lines in that of Field, and one could scarce be blamed for believing that a number of hap-hazard, sketchy strokes with which the collaborators dashed off a character whom they deemed of no great importance, all so fell upon the canvas that, by a miracle of chance, they went to form the lineaments of a real woman. The discussion of the probability or possibility of such a hypothesis would carry us very far afield, and would involve the question of the extent to which all genius is unconscious and intuitive. But however that may be, the *result* of their labors remains the same, there to behold in black and white, and Beaumelle, so far from being a poorly conceived and unsatisfactory wanton who is the chief defect of the play, is a figure of no mean verisimilitude who succeeds after a fashion in linking together the loose-knit dual structure of the drama; to whose main catastrophe she adds her own tragedy, a tragedy neither impressive nor deeply stirring, it is true, for she is a petty spirit from whom great tragedy does not proceed—but tragedy still—the eternal, inevitable tragedy of false romanticism, that has found its culmination in the person of Emma Bovary.

In this study of Beaumelle, *The Fatal Dowry* has been subjected to a much more intensive examination than it is the custom to bestow upon the dramas of the successors of Shakespeare. The truth is that the plays of the Jacobean period do not, as a rule, admit of such analysis. In most of them, and especially in the plays of Massinger, he who searches and probes them comes

presently to a point beyond which critical inquiry is stopped short with a desperate finality; be they ever so strikingly splendid and glittering fair in their poetry and their characterization, these dazzling qualities lie upon the surface, and a few careful perusals exhaust their possibilities and tell us all there is to know of them. But *The Fatal Dowry*, though less imposing than a number of others, stands almost alone among its contemporaries in sharing with the great creations of Shakespeare the power to open new vistas, to present new aspects, to offer new suggestions, the longer it is studied. Perhaps this is due to the fact that, as has already been said, it is not so much a tragedy of the accepted type as a cross-section of life.

How does it come about, we may well ask, that this play possesses qualities so rare and so strangely at variance with those which are normal to the work of Massinger—its masterly portrait-gallery of *dramatis personae* and its inexhaustible field for interpretation. We can suspect an answer only in the complementary nature of the two minds that went to fashion it—in the union in this one production of the talents of Massinger and of Field.

A reference to the analysis of collaboration discloses that, so far as the actual writing of the play goes, the figure of Novall Senior is altogether the work of Massinger. His son, on the other hand, is almost entirely the work of Field; in Massinger's share he appears only in the first part of III, i, and in the scene of his surprisal and death. Indeed, both the young gallant himself and all his satellites can safely be put down as creations of the actor-dramatist. They have their parallels in his comedy of *Woman is a Weathercock*, down to the page whose pert *asides* of satiric comment are anticipated in the earlier work by those of a youngster of identical kidney. The long scene in which we are introduced to Beaumelle and given insight into her character and mental attitude is Field's throughout; thereafter she has only to act out her already-revealed nature—first as the impudent adulteress and later as the repentent sinner, in both of which roles she affords Massinger excellent opportunities to display his favorite powers of speech-making. Charalois, Romont, and Rochfort are treated at length by both dramatists.

But in a harmonious collaboration, such as *The Fatal Dowry*

plainly was, the contributions of the two authors cannot be identified with the passages from their respective pens. Each must inevitably have planned, suggested, criticised. The question remains whether we can in any measure determine what part of the conception was due to each. Beyond the Novall Junior group we cannot establish distinct lines of cleavage. What we can do is to suggest the features of the finished product which Field and Massinger brought severally to its making—to point out the qualities of the two men which were joined to produce the play they have given us.

The outstanding excellences of Massinger were a thorough grasp of the architectonics of play-making in the building both of separate Act and entire drama; an adherence to an essential unity of design and treatment; a conscientious regard to the details of stage-craft; a vehicle of dignified and at times noble verse, without violent conceits or lapses into triviality, sustained, lucid, regular; and a genuine eloquence in forensic passages. His chief weaknesses were a certain stiffness of execution which made his plays appear always as structures rather than organisms, a ponderous monotony of fancy, and an inability to create or reproduce or understand human nature. His characters are normally types, their qualities—honor, virtue, bravery, etc.—mere properties which they can assume or lay aside at pleasure like garments, their conduct governed more by the exigencies of plot than by any conceivable psychology.

The weaknesses of Field—as revealed in his two independent comedies—were of a nature more evasive, less capable of definition. A tendency to weave too many threads into the action, an occasional hasty and skimping treatment of his scenes which leaves them unconvincing for lack of sufficient elaboration, and a general thinness of design and workmanship are discoverable. Defects such as these could be readily corrected by association with the single-minded, painstaking, thorough Massinger. On the other hand he possessed a lightness of touch, a blithe vigor, and a racy, though often obscene, humor foreign to his colleague. What is more important, he possessed a considerable first-hand knowledge of men and women, and an ability to put them in his plays and endow them with something of life—not to conceive great figures, such as dominate the imagination, but to reproduce

with vitality and freshness the sort of people he saw about him—in other words, not to create but to depict; and furthermore Field seems to have had a special gift for sketching them rather clearly in a very brief compass.<sup>11</sup> Mr. Saintsbury was right in declaring that Massinger never could draw a woman. But Field could, and the critic was rather unfortunate in applying his broadly correct observation to the one woman of Massinger's in the delineation of whom he had Field to help him!

With these facts in mind, the distinctive virtues of *The Fatal Dowry* can be accounted for. Massinger here possessed a colleague who had just those talents of insight and verve and grasp of life that were denied his own plodding, bookishly learned mind. Not only young Novall and his satellites, but Beaumelle certainly, and probably Pontalier (whom Massinger would have been more likely to degrade to the baseness of Novall's other dependents) may be put down as essentially Field's creations, while in the case of the others he was ever at Massinger's elbow to guard him against blunders, if, indeed, their preliminary mapping out of the rather obvious lines along which the action and characters must develop were not of itself a sufficiently sure guide. To Massinger, on the other hand, may safely be ascribed the basic conception of such stately figures as Charalois and Rochfort, however much Field may have been responsible for preserving them as fresh and living portraits.

As to share in plot structure, in the absence of any known source, we may conjecture that the germ from which the play evolved was the conception of that situation by which Charalois, burdened as he is with an immense debt of thankfulness to Rochfort, finds himself suddenly called by the imperative demands of

<sup>11</sup> See the figure of Captain Pouts in *Woman is a Weathercock*. He might easily have been made a mere *miles gloriosus*; instead he is a real man,—coarse, revengeful, dissolute, quarrelsome, hectoring—no doubt at heart a coward, but not more absurdly so in the face of his pretensions than many of his type in actual life. For characters clearly visualized in a few simple strokes, may be noted in the same play Lady Ninny, Lucida, and, apart from one speech (M. 356-7) out of character obviously for comic effect, Kate; in *Amends for Ladies*, Ingen. Examples of Field's power in more idealistic work may be found in *The Knight of Malta* in the delineation of Montferrat's passion (I, i) and in the scene between Miranda and Oriana (V, i).

honor to do that which will strike his benefactor to the heart. The grounding of the hero's debt of gratitude in the story of Miltiades and Cimon was probably the work of Massinger, of whose veneration for things classic we have abundant evidence, while to him also, we may believe, was due the shaping of the story in such fashion that he had opportunity to exploit his greatest gift in no less than two formal trials, one informal trial, and a long Act besides given over almost exclusively to verbose disputes and exhortations. The circumstances of the discovery of the amour of Beaumelle and Novall, while penned by Massinger, are more likely an invention of Field's, not only as faintly reminiscent of his *Amends for Ladies*, but as according better with the general spirit of his work.

Several plays of the Massinger corpus are more striking on first acquaintance than *The Fatal Dowry*, and yet others surpass it in regard to this feature or that. It has not the gigantic protagonist of *A New Way to Pay Old Debts*, or the admirable structure of that fine play, which works with ever-cumulating intensity to one final, tremendous climax. It has not the impressiveness of *The Duke of Milan*, or its sheer sweep of tragic passion and breathless intensity, or anything so compelling as its great scene of gathering jealousy that breaks forth at last in murder. Its verse is less poetic than that of *The Maid of Honor*; it lacks the charm of *The Great Duke of Florence*, and the ethical fervor of *The Roman Actor*. But in utter reality, in convincing simulation of life, which holds good under the most exhaustive study and makes that study forever continue to yield new suggestions and new appreciations, and in abundance and inherent truthfulness of detailed characterization, it stands alone, and these sterling qualities must so outweigh its defects as to insure for it a high place, not only among the productions of its authors, but among the plays of the Jacobean Period as a whole.

#### STAGE HISTORY—ADAPTATIONS—DERIVATIVES

Beyond the statement on the title-page of the 1632 Quarto, that *The Fatal Dowry* had been "often acted at the Private House in Blackfriars by his Majesties Servants," nothing is known of its early stage history. It was not revived after the Restoration,

and until the publication of the Coxeter edition of Massinger seems to have been almost unknown. At last, in 1825, an emended version was placed upon the boards by no less an actor than the great Macready. January 5 of that year was the date, and Drury Lane the place, of its initial performance, Macready himself taking the part of Romont, Wallack—Charalois, Terry—Rochfort, and Mrs. W. West—Beaumelle. "The play was well acted and enthusiastically applauded," says Macready in his *Reminiscences* (p. 228); "its repetition for the following Tuesday was hailed most rapturously; but Friday<sup>12</sup> came, and with it a crowded house, to find me laboring under such indisposition that it was with difficulty I could keep erect without support." Macready's serious illness cut short the run of the play, and when he was at length (April 11) able to take it up again, the interest of the public had abated, and it in consequence was repeated only a few times—seven being the total number of its performances.

The variant of *The Fatal Dowry* in which Macready acted was the work of Sheil, and involved substantial divergences. Romont's release from prison follows immediately upon Novall Senior's consent to his pardon, and in consequence, together with his conversation with Rochfort, is transferred from Act II to the close of Act I, while the redemption of Charalois takes place at the funeral of his father, which concludes Act II. For the scene between Beaumelle and her maids is substituted another colloquy of similar import but chastened tone. A brief scene of no especial significance is inserted at the beginning of Act III, in the interval between which and the preceding Act three weeks are supposed to have elapsed; the rest of Act III follows much the same course as the original, save that the application of Romont to Rochfort and his foiling by the stratagem of Beaumelle and Bellapert are omitted. A really notable departure is found in the discovery of the amour by Charalois. According to Sheil, Novall Junior and his mistress attempt to elope, but the note which appoints their rendezvous falls into Charalois' hands, and he waits for the lovers and surprises them, killing Novall off-stage. The Fifth Act opens with a scene of a few lines only, in which Beaumont bears to Rochfort a request from Charalois to meet him in the church yard. Then follows a lugubrious scene in the dead of

<sup>12</sup> Apparently *The Fatal Dowry* was not performed every day.



night beside the tomb of the hero's father, to which place are transferred the reconciliation between Charalois and Romont, and the judgment of Rochfort! Beaumelle, however, does not appear during the trial, and upon the paternal sentence of doom, Charalois reveals her body, slain already by his hand. To the father he vindicates his action in much the same words as in Massinger's last court-room scene, and then, on the appearance of Novall Senior clamoring for vengeance and accompanied by the minions of the law, stabs himself.

The version of Sheil follows with but occasional exceptions the language of the original wherever possible. It makes some slight changes in the minor characters.

Sheil's redaction was also presented at Bath on February 18 and 21, Romont being acted by Hamblin, Charalois by Warde, Beaumelle by Miss E. Tree. "Hamblin never appeared to so much advantage—in the scene with Novall he reminded one strongly of John Kemble," says Genest (*Hist. Dra. and Stage in Eng.*, IX, 322).

At Sadler's Wells, Samuel Phelps, who at that time was reviving a number of the old dramas, took the stage in *The Fatal Dowry* on August 27, 1845. This, however, was Sheil's version, and not the original play of Massinger and Field, as has been sometimes supposed. It ranked as one of his four chief productions of that year. He, too, chose for himself the part of Romont, which was considered by many his greatest quasi-tragic role. Marston appeared as Charalois, G. Bennett as Rochfort, and Miss Cooper as Beaumelle.

*The Fatal Dowry* in substantially its own proper form does not appear ever to have been acted after Jacobean times.

If the stage career of *The Fatal Dowry* has been meagre, not so the extent of its influence. Its literary parenthood begins before "the closing of the theatres" and continues even to our own day. As early as 1638 it was echoed in *The Lady's Trial* of Ford. Here the figures of Auria, Adurni, Aurelio, and Spinella correspond roughly with Charalois, young Novall, Romont, and Beaumelle respectively. Auria has gone to the wars, and in his absence his wife is pursued by Adurni, who sits at table with her in private, when Aurelio breaks in upon them, bursting open the

doors. Spinella bitterly resents the intrusion and the aspersions of the intruder, and when, on the return home of Auria, Aurelio accuses her to him, it is without shaking his faith in her loyalty. Here the analogy ends: spite of Auria's incredulousness there is no rupture between the friends; Spinella establishes her innocence; and Adurni, while guilty enough in his intent against her, shows himself thereafter to be an essentially noble youth, who will defend to any length the lady's honor which has become subject to question through fault of his, and for this gallant reparation, is not only forgiven, but even cherished ever after by the husband he had sought to wrong.

The more steadily one regards the man John Ford and his work, the more probable does it appear that the relationship between *The Fatal Dowry* and *The Lady's Trial* is not one of mere reminiscence or influence, but of direct parentage. That strange and baleful figure, who seems almost a modern Decadent born out of his time, had a profound interest in moral problems, to the study of which he brought morbid ethical sensibilities scarce matched before the latter nineteenth century. (Witness his conception, in *The Broken Heart*, of a loveless marriage as tantamount to adultery.) Ford's talent for invention was deficient to the extent that he was hard put to it for plots. It is not at all unlikely that he surveyed the Massingerian tragedy, and, repelled by the conduct of its figures, exclaimed to himself: "I will write a play to centre around a situation as incriminating as that of Act III of *The Fatal Dowry*; but my personages will be worthier characters; I will show a lady who, spite of appearances, is of stainless innocence and vindicates her husband's trust in the face of evidence; I will show a friendship strong enough to endure an honestly mistaken aspersion put upon the chastity of a wife, though the charge is not for one moment credited; I will show that even the would-be seducer may be a fine fellow at bottom, and set forth a generous emulation in magnanimity between him and the husband. See how finely everything would work out with the *right* sort of people!" It is at least a plausible hypothesis.

Nicholas Rowe, who was the first modern editor of Shakespeare, contemplated also an edition of Massinger, but gave up the project that he might more safely plunder one of his plays.

Rowe's famous tragedy, *The Fair Penitent*, was deliberately stolen from *The Fatal Dowry*. It appeared in 1703, and spite of a ludicrous accident<sup>13</sup> which cut short its first run, took rank as one of the most celebrated dramas of the English stage. Rowe lived during the vogue of the "She-tragedy," while the canons of literary criticism of his day demanded a "regular," pseudo-classical form and a sententious tone. Accordingly, in his hands the chief figure in the play, as is evidenced by the change in title, becomes the guilty wife, here called Calista, who is "now the evil queen of the heroic plays; now the lachrymose moralizer;" the theme is indeed *her* story, not Altamont's (Charalois)—her seduction (prior to the nuptials and before the opening of the play), her grief, her plight, her exposure, her death;—she holds the centre of the stage to the very end. The number of the *dramatis personae* is cut down to eight; all touches of comedy are excised; and the double plot of the original is unified by the bold stroke of throwing back to a time before the opening of the play the entire episode of the unburied corpse and the origin of the hero's friendship with the father of the heroine.

Discussions of the relative merits of *The Fair Penitent* and its source have been almost invariably acrimonious. Nor is this to be wondered at, for after reading the old tragedy with its severe dignity and noble restraint, one can scarce peruse without irritation the cloyingly melifluous, emasculated verse of Rowe—by

<sup>13</sup> During the run of this play one Warren, who was Powell's dresser, claimed a right of lying for his master and performing the dead part of Lothario—about the middle of the scene Powell called for Warren; who as loudly replied from the stage, "Here Sir"—Powell (who was ignorant of the part his man was doing) repeated without loss of time, "Come here this moment you Son of a Whore or I'll break all the bones in your skin"—Warren knew his hasty temper, and therefore without any reply jumped up with all his sables about him, which unfortunately were tied to the handles of the bier and dragged after him—but this was not all—the laugh and roar began in the audience and frightened poor Warren so much that with the bier at his tail he threw down Calista and overwhelmed her, with the table, lamp, books, bones, &c.—he tugged till he broke off his trammels and made his escape, and the play at once ended with immoderate fits of laughter—Betterton would not suffer *The Fair Penitent* to be played again, till poor Warren's misconduct was somewhat forgotten—this story was told to Chetwood by Bowman [Sciolto]—(GENEST, II, 281-2).

turns grandiloquent and sentimental. The characterization of *The Fair Penitent* is, in the main, insipid, and while Rowe's heroine holds a commanding place in her drama to which Beaumelle does not pretend, the latter is a great deal more natural, and indeed, for that matter, far more truly a "penitent." An exception to the general insipidity is Lothario, who is the analogue of the insignificant Novall Junior—"the gay Lothario"—whose very name has been ever since a synonym for the graceful, graceless, devil-may-care libertine—whose figure has been the prototype of a long line of similar characters in English literature, beginning with Richardson's Lovelace and not yet closed with Anthony Hope's Rupert of Hentzau. Beside this striking creation, the seducer of Beaumelle shows poorly indeed; but it is doubtful if the old dramatists would have consented to paint such an attractive rogue, had they been able; they wanted their Novall to be just the cowardly, dandyfied thing they made him. Beyond the portrait of Lothario, small ground for praise can be found in *The Fair Penitent*. That part of the action of *The Fatal Dowry* which under Rowe's treatment antedates the rise of the curtain is narrated in the most stiffly mechanical sort of exposition; the action is developed by such threadbare theatrical devices as a lost letter and an overheard conversation; the voluble speeches of the several characters are, throughout, declamatory effusions almost unbelievably divorced from the apposite utterance of any rational human being under the circumstances. An Altamont who has been assured and reassured from his bride's own lips of her aversion for him can fling himself from a quarrel with his life-long friend in hysterical defence of her, to seek solace in her arms—

*There if in any pause of love I rest  
Breathless with bliss upon her panting breast,  
In broken, melting accents I will swear,  
Henceforth to trust my heart with none save her;*

a Sciolto who has given his daughter a dagger with which to end her shame, and then has arrested her willing arm with the prayer that she will not dispatch herself until he is gone from the sight of her, can thereupon take leave of her with the statement:

*There is I know not what of sad presage  
That tells me I shall never see thee more.*

The play, which enjoyed an immense fame, high contemporary appreciation, and a long career on the stage, remains a curious memorial of the taste of a bygone day.

It is noteworthy that in *The Fair Penitent* Horatio, as Romont in all modern reproductions of *The Fatal Dowry*, is the great acting part—not the husband.

In 1758 was produced at the Haymarket a drama entitled *The Insolvent or Filial Piety*, from the pen of Aaron Hill. In the preface it is said—according to Genest (IV, 538)—“Wilks about 30 years before gave an old manuscript play, called the *Guiltless Adulteress*, to Theo. Cibber who was manager of what then was the Summer Company—after an interval of several years this play was judged to want a revisal to fit it for representation—Aaron Hill at the request of Theo. Cibber almost new wrote the whole, and the last act was entirely his in conduct, sentiment and diction.” In reality, *The Insolvent* is *The Fatal Dowry* over again, altered to tragicomedy, and with the names of the characters changed. The first two Acts of Hill's play proceed much after the manner of its prototype, with close parallels in language. From thenceforward, however, the action diverges. The bride, Amelia, resists the further attentions of her former sweetheart. They are none the less observed and suspected by her husband's friend, who speaks of the matter to both her father and her lord. The former promises to observe her with watchful eye; Chalons, the husband, is at first resentful of the imputation, but presently yields to his friend's advice, that he pretend a two-days' journey, from which he will return unexpectedly. During his absence, his wife's maid introduces the lover into her mistress' chamber while Amelia sleeps. There Chalons surprises him kneeling beside the bed, and kills him. Amelia stabs herself, but the confession of her maid reveals her innocence, and her wound is pronounced not mortal.

It has been suggested (*Biographia Dramatica*, II, 228—quoted by Phelan, p. 59, and Schwarz, p. 74) that in Hill's *Zara* (adaptation of the *Zaire* of Voltaire), also, Nerestan's voluntary return to captivity in order to end that of his friends, whom he lacked the means to ransom with gold, was suggested by the behavior of Charalois; but this can be no more than a coincidence, as it here but reproduces what is in the French original.

A long interval, and finally, in the dawn of the twentieth century, there appeared the next and latest recrudescence of *The Fatal Dowry*. This was *Der Graf von Charolais, ein Trauerspiel*, by Richard Beer-Hofmann, disciple of the Neo-Romantic School or *Vienna Decadents*, a coterie built about the leadership of Hugo von Hofmannsthal. Beer-Hofmann's play—a five-Act tragedy in blank verse—was produced for the first time at the Neue Theatre, Berlin, on December 24, 1904, and was received with considerable acclaim. Unlike Rowe, he gives full credit to his source, from which he has drawn no less extensively than the author of *The Fair Penitent*. Unlike Rowe, he goes back to the old dramatists in the matter of construction, placing upon the stage once more the episode of the unburied corpse and the noble son; he even outdoes *The Fatal Dowry* in this respect, by allowing the first half of his plot three Acts instead of two, with only two Acts for the amour and its tragic consequences. In his hands the hero again becomes the central figure; in fact, the three principal versions of this *donnee* suggest by their titles their respective viewpoints: *The Fatal Dowry*; *The Fair Penitent*; *Der Graf von Charolais*. DER GRAF VON CHAROLAIS, be it observed;—this new redaction is no longer the tale of a “fatal dowry;” no longer is the first part of the dual theme merely introductory and accessory—it is coordinate with the second. Beer-Hofmann has sought to achieve a kind of unity from his double plot by making his fundamental theme not the adulterous intrigue, but *the destiny of Charolais*, thus converting the play into a Tragedy of Fate, which pursues the hero inexorably through all his life. This strictly classical *motif* animating the *donnee* of a Jacobean play reproduced in the twentieth century presents, as might be expected, the aspect of an exotic growth, which is not lessened by the extreme sensuousness of treatment throughout, such as has always been one of the cardinal and distinctive qualities of the Decadent School the world over. But as a contrast in the dramatic technique and verse of Jacobean and modern times, *Der Graf von Charolais* is extremely interesting. The difference is striking between the severe simplicity of three centuries ago, and the elaborate stagecraft of to-day, its insistence on detail, and studied care in the portraiture of minor characters. Yet minutia do not make tragedy, and while their superficial realism and the

congeniality of the contemporary point of view undeniably lend to Beer-Hofmann's redaction a palatability and a power to interest and appeal which its original does not possess to the modern reader, yet a discriminating critic will turn back to the old play with a feeling that, for all its stiffness and conventions, he breathes there a more vital air. To the enrichment of his theme Beer-Hofmann contributes every ingenious effect possible to symbolism, delicate suggestion, and scenic device; this exterior decoration is gorgeous in its color and seductive warmth, but no amount of such stuff can compensate for the fundamental flaw in the crucial episode of his tragedy. In spite of the care which he has lavished on the scene between his heroine and her seducer, the surrender of the wife—three years married, a mother, and loving both husband and child—remains insufficiently motivated and sheerly inexplicable, and by this vital, inherent defect the play must fall. Moreover, it lacks a hero. Romont can no longer play the main part he did in former versions; he is reduced to a mere shadow. In a tragedy of Fate, which blights a man's career, phase by phase, with persistent, relentless hand, that man must necessarily be the central figure, and, of right, *should* be an imposing figure—a protagonist at once gigantic and appealing, who will draw all hearts to him in pity and terror at the helpless, hopeless struggle of over-matched greatness and worth; whereas Charolais—

The case of Charolais is peculiar. *A priori* we should expect him to be just such a personage, yet his conduct throughout is best explainable as that of a man dominated, not by noble impulses, but by an extreme egoism—a man acutely responsive alike to his sense-impressions and his feverish imagination, and possessed of an exaggerated squeamishness towards the ugly and the unpleasant. When, in the First Act, he bursts into tears, he confesses it is not for his father that he weeps, but for his own hard lot; he suffers from his repugnance to the idea of his father's corpse rotting above ground—a repugnance so intolerable to him that he will yield his liberty to escape it. He purposes to cashier the innkeeper because the sight of the lecherous patrons of his hostelry has disgusted him, and he alters his resolve and forgives the fellow, not from any considerations of mercy, but because the mental picture of the man's distress tor-

tures him. And by similar personal repugnances reacting on egoism is his behavior in the denouement to be accounted for, and in this light becomes logically credible and clearly understood. Few practices are more hazardous or unjust than judging an artist by his objective creations; but an ignoble protagonist, as Charolais is represented, is in such ill accord with any conceivable purpose on the part of Beer-Hofmann, and so unlikely to have been intended by him, that one cannot help strongly suspecting that the author unconsciously projected himself into the character and thus revealed his own nature and point of view. In any case he has presented for his hero a whimperer who can command neither our sympathy nor our respect when he cries above the bodies of his benefactor and her who is that benefactor's daughter, his own wife, and the mother of his child:

*Ist dies Stück denn aus,  
Weil jene starb? Und ich? An mich denkt keiner?*

We have come a long way from Massinger and Field and the early seventeenth century. The shadow of the old dramatists reaches far, even to our own time; we have seen their play re-developed, but never improved upon, by pseudo-classicist, and popularizer, and Decadent hyper-aesthete. That which was the vulnerable point in the original production—its two-fold plot—has been still for every imitator a stone of stumbling. Rowe tried to escape it by the suppression of the antecedent half, and the fraction which remained in his hand was an artificial thing without the breath of life, that had to be attenuated and padded out with speechifying to fill the compass of its five Acts. Beer-Hofmann tried to escape it by superimposing an idea not proper to the story, and beneath the weight of this his tragedy collapsed in the middle, for its addition over-packed the drama, and left him not room enough to make convincing the conduct of his characters. The first essayers, who attacked in straightforward fashion their unwieldy theme, succeeded best; all attempts to obviate its essential defect have marred rather than mended. Perhaps the theme is by its nature unsuited to dramatic treatment, and yet there is much that is dramatic about that theme, as is evinced by the fact that playwrights have been unable to let it lie.



## EDITOR'S NOTE ON TEXT

THE present text aims to reproduce exactly the Quarto edition of 1632, retaining its punctuation, spelling, capitals, italics, and stage directions—amending only the metrical alignment.<sup>1</sup> Mere mistakes of printing—inverted and broken letters—are restored, but are duly catalogued in the foot notes. The division into scenes, as made by Gifford, and his affixment of the *locus* of each, are inserted into the text, inclosed in brackets. In the foot notes are recorded all variants of all subsequent editions. Differences of punctuation are given, if they could possibly alter the meaning, but not otherwise—nor mere differences in *wording* of stage directions, nor differences in spelling, nor elision for metre. In the Quarto the elder Novall is sometimes designated before his lines as *Novall Senior*, sometimes merely as *Novall*—no confusion is possible, since he and his son are never on the stage at the same time. Gifford and Symons always write *Novall Senior*, while Coxeter and Mason write *Novall* alone in I, i, and *Novall Senior* thereafter. I have not thought it worth while to note the variants of the several texts on this point.

<sup>1</sup> This, of course, may require the substitution of a capital for a small letter, as when a mid-line word of the Quarto becomes in the re-alignment the first word of the verse.

- Q.—The Quarto—1632  
C.—Coxeter's edition, 1759  
M.—Monck Mason's edition, 1779  
G.—Gifford's [2nd.] edition, 1813  
S.—Symons' (Mermaid) edition, 1893  
f.—and all later editions  
s. d.—stage direction

THE  
F A T A L L  
D O V V R Y :  
A  
T R A G E D Y :

---

*As it hath beene often Acted at the Pri-  
uate House in Blackefryers, by his  
Maiesties Seruants.*

---

*Written by P. M. and N. F.*

---

LONDON,  
Printed by IOHN NORTON, for FRANCIS  
CONSTABLE, and are to be sold at his  
shop at the Crane, in Pauls Church-  
yard. 1632.

*Charalois*  
*Romont.*  
*Charmi.*  
*Nouall Sen.*  
*Liladam.*  
*DuCroy.*  
*Rochfort.*  
*Baumont.*  
*Pontalier.*  
*Malotin.*  
*Beaumelle.*

*Florimel.* }  
*Bellapert.* }  
*Aymer.*  
*Nouall Iun.*  
*Aduocates.*  
*Creditors 3.*  
*Officers.*  
*Priest.*  
*Taylor.*  
*Barber.*  
*Perfumer.*

[Page.]

[Presidents, Captains, Soldiers, Mourners, Gaoler, Bailiffs, Servants.]

G. and S. omit *Officers*, and add those roles which are enclosed in brackets.

They add explanations of each character, also changing the order. For *Gaoler*, S. reads *Gaolers*.

Baumont—M., f spell *Beaumont*.

C. & M. add after the list of *Dramatis Personae: The Scene, Dijon in Burgundy*.

# The Fatall Dowry:

## A Tragedy:

*Act. primus. Scaena prima:*

[*A Street before the Court of Justice*]

*Enter Charaloyes with a paper, Romont, Charmi.*

*Charmi*

SIR, I may moue the Court to ferue your will,  
But therein fhall both wrong you and my felfe.

*Rom.* Why thinke you fo fir?

*Charmi.* 'Cause I am familiar

With what will be their anfwere: they will fay,

'Tis againſt law, and argue me of Ignorance

5

For offering them the motion.

*Rom.* You know not, Sir,

How in this caufe they may diſpence with Law,

And therefore frame not you their anfwere for them,

But doe your parts.

*Charmi.* I loue the caufe fo well,

As I could runne, the hazard of a checke for 't.

10

*Rom.* From whom?

*Charmi.* Some of the bench, that watch to give it,

More then to doe the office that they fit for:

10 *As—That* (C., M.)

12, 16, etc. *then*—modernized to *than* throughout by all later eds.

But giue me (fir) my fee.

*Rom.* Now you are Noble.

*Charmi.* I shall deferue this better yet, in giuing  
My Lord some counsell, (if he please to heare it) 15  
Then I shall doe with pleading.

*Rom.* What may it be, fir?

*Charmi.* That it would please his Lordship, as the presidents,  
And Counsaylors of Court come by, to stand  
Heere, and but shew your selfe, and to some one 20  
Or two, make his request: there is a minute  
When a mans prefence speakes in his owne cause,  
More then the tongues of twenty aduocates.

*Rom.* I haue vrg'd that.

*Enter Rochfort: DuCroye.*

*Charmi.* Their Lordships here are coming,  
I must goe get me a place, you'll finde me in Court,  
And at your seruice *Exit Charmi.*

*Rom.* Now put on your Spirits. 25

*Du Croy.* The ease that you prepare your selfe, my Lord,  
In giuing vp the place you hold in Court,  
Will proue (I feare) a trouble in the State,  
And that no flight one.

*Roch.* Pray you fir, no more.

*Rom.* Now fir, lose not this offerd means: their looks 30  
Fixt on you, with a pittying earnestnesse,  
Inuite you to demand their furtherance  
To your good purpose.—This such a dulnesse  
So foolish and vntimely as—

*Du Croy.* You know him.

*Roch.* I doe, and much lament the sudden fall 35  
Of his braue house. It is young *Charloyes.*  
Sonne to the Marihall, from whom he inherits  
His fame and vertues onely.

13, end s. d.: Gives him his purse (G., S.

19 your—him (G., S.

33 This such—This is such (S.

34 . —? (C., f.

*Rom.* Ha, they name you.

*Du Croye.* His father died in prifon two daies fince.

*Roch.* Yes, to the fhame of this vngrateful State;

That fuch a Mafter in the art of warre,

So noble, and fo highly meriting,

From this forgetfull Country, fhould, for want

Of meanes to fatisfie his creditors,

The fummcs he tooke vp for the generall good,

Meet with an end fo infamous.

*Rom.* Dare you euer

Hope for like opportunity?

*Du Croye.* My good Lord!

*Roch.* My wifh bring comfort to you.

*Du Croye.* The time calls vs.

*Roch.* Good morrow Colonell.

*Exeunt Roch. Du Croye.*

*Rom.* This obftinate fpleene,

You thinke becomes your forrow, and forts wel

With your blacke fuits: but grant me wit, or iudgement,

And by the freedome of an honeft man,

And a true friend to boote, I fweare 'tis fhamefull.

And therefore flatter not your felfe with hope,

Your fable habit, with the hat and cloake,

No though the ribons helpe, haue power to worke 'em

To what you would: for thofe that had no eyes,

To fee the great acts of your father, will not,

From any fhation forrow can put on,

Bee taught to know their duties.

*Char.* If they will not,

They are too old to learne, and I too young

To giue them counfell, fince if they partake

The vnderftanding, and the hearts of men,

They will preuent my words and teares: if not,

What can perfwafion, though made eloquent

With griefe, worke vpon fuch as haue chang'd natures

45 *fummcs—sum* (C., M.)

46 and 47 *Dare . . . oportunitie?*—printed as one line in Q.

47, end s. d.: *They salute him as they paff by* (G., S.)

56, after *No* —, (C., f.)

56 *'em—them* (G., S.)

With the moſt ſauage beaſt? Bleft, bleſt be euer  
 The memory of that happy age, when iuſtice  
 Had no gards to keepe off wrongd innocence,  
 From flying to her ſuccours, and in that 70  
 Affurance of redreſſe: where now (*Romont*)  
 The damnd, with more eaſe may aſcend from Hell,  
 Then we ariue at her. One Cerberus there  
 Forbids the paſſage, in our Courts a thouſand,  
 As lowd, and fertyle headed, and the Client 75  
 That wants the fops, to fill their rauenuous throats,  
 Muſt hope for no acceſſe: why ſhould I then  
 Attempt impoſſibilities: you friend, being  
 Too well acquainted with my dearth of meanes,  
 To make my entrance that way?

*Rom.* Would I were not. 80

But Sir, you haue a cauſe, a cauſe ſo iuſt,  
 Of ſuch neceſſitie, not to be deferd,  
 As would compell a mayde, whoſe foot was neuer  
 Set ore her fathers threſhold, nor within  
 The houſe where ſhe was borne, euer ſpake word, 85  
 Which was not vſhered with pure virgin blufhes,  
 To drowne the tempeſt of a pleadrs tongue,  
 And force corruption to giue backe the hire  
 It tooke againſt her: let examples moue you.  
 You ſee great men in birth, eſteeme and fortune, 90  
 Rather then loſe a ſcruple of their right,  
 Fawne baſely vpon ſuch, whoſe gownes put off,  
 They would diſdaine for Seruants.

*Char.* And to theſe  
 Can I become a fuytor?

*Rom.* Without loſſe,  
 Would you conſider, that to gaine their fauors,  
 Our chaſteſt dames put off their modeſties, 95  
 Soldiers forget their honors, vſurers

70 and in that—and, in that, (C., f.)

71 where—whereas (C., M.)

90 great men—men great (C., f.)

92 and 93 And . . . fuytor?—printed as one line in Q.



Make sacrifice of Gold, poets of wit,  
 And men religious, part with fame, and goodnesse?  
 Be therefore wonne to vse the meanes, that may  
 100  
 Aduance your pious ends.

*Char.* You shall orecome.

*Rom.* And you receiue the glory, pray you now practife.  
 'Tis well. *Enter Old Nouall, Liladam,*

*Char.* Not looke on me! *& 3 Creditors.*

*Rom.* You must haue patience —  
 Offer't againe.

*Char.* And be againe contemn'd?

*Nou.* I know whats to be done.

*1 Cred.* And that your Lordship  
 105  
 Will please to do your knowledge, we offer, first  
 Our thankefull hearts heere, as a bounteous earnest  
 To what we will adde.

*Nou.* One word more of this

I am your enemie. Am I a man  
 Your bribes can worke on? ha?

*Lilad.* Friends, you mistake  
 110

The way to winne my Lord, he must not heare this,  
 But I, as one in fauour, in his fight,  
 May harken to you for my profit. Sir,  
 I pray heare em.

*Nou.* Tis well.

*Lilad.* Obserue him now.

*Nou.* Your cause being good, and your proceedings fo,  
 115  
 Without corruption; I am your friend,  
 Speake your desires.

*2 Cred.* Oh, they are charitable,  
 The Marshall stood ingag'd vnto vs three,  
 Two hundred thousand crownes, which by his death

103 'Tis well. —G. & S. assign to *Char.* and follow with s. d.: *Tenders*  
*his petition.* The change is uncalled for.

103 s. d., after *Nouall* —G. & S. insert *Advocates.*

103 and 104 *You . . . againe.*—printed as one line in Q.

104 *Offer't—Offer it* (M., f.)

110, end s. d.: *Aside to Cred.* (G., S.)

114 *I pray heare em.*—*Pray hear them.* (G.—*I pray hear them.* (S.)

114 *Tis—It is* (G.)

116 ; —M., f. omit.

We are defeated of. For which great losse 120  
 We ayme at nothing but his rotten flefh,  
 Nor is that cruelty.

*I Cred.* I haue a fonne,  
 That talks of nothing but of Gunnes and Armors,  
 And sweares hee'll be a foldier, tis an humor  
 I would diuert him from, and I am told 125  
 That if I minifter to him in his drinke  
 Powder, made of this banquerout Marfhalls bones,  
 Prouided that the carcafe rot aboue ground  
 'Twill cure his foolish frenfie.

*Nou.* You fhew in it  
 A fathers care. I haue a fonne my felfe, 130  
 A fashionable Gentleman and a peacefull:  
 And but I am affur'd he's not fo giuen,  
 He fhould take of it too, Sir what are you?

*Char.* A Gentleman.  
*Nou.* So are many that rake dunghills.  
 If you haue any fuit, moue it in Court. 135  
 I take no papers in corners.

*Rom.* Yes  
 As the matter may be carried, and hereby  
 To mannage the conuayance —— Follow him.

*Lil.* You are rude. I fay, he fhall not paffe. *Exit Nouall.*  
*Rom.* You fay fo. *Char: and Aduocates* 140

On what affurance?  
 For the well cutting of his Lordfhips cornes,  
 Picking his toes, or any office elfe  
 Neerer to bafeneffe!

*Lil.* Looke vpon mee better,  
 Are thefe the enignes of fo coorfe a fellow?  
 Be well aduis'd,

123 *Armors—Armour* (C., M., G.

127 *banqucrout*—here and elsewhere by later eds. always *bankrupt*.

133 *Sir*—assigned to *Char.* by G., who adds s. d.: *Tenders his petition.*

136 and 137 *Yes . . . hereby*—printed as one line in Q.

137 *hereby—whereby* (M., G.

139 *You are—You're* (C., M.

139, after *fo* . —? (C., M.—! (G., S.

139 s. d.—The exit of *Novall* is placed earlier, at l. 136, by G. & S.

*Rom.* Out, rogue, do not I know, (*Kicks him*) 145  
 These glorious weedes spring from the fordid dunghill  
 Of thy officious bafeneffe? wert thou worthy  
 Of anything from me, but my contempt,  
 I would do more then this, more, you Court-spider.

*Lil.* But that this man is lawlesse; he should find 150  
 that I am valiant.

*1 Cred.* If your eares are fast,  
 Tis nothing. Whats a blow or two? As much—

*2 Cred.* These chaftifements, as vsfull are as frequent  
 To such as would grow rich.

*Rom.* Are they so Rascals?  
 I will be-friend you then.

*1 Cred.* Beare witnesse, Sirs. 155

*Lil.* Trueth, I haue borne my part already, friends.  
 In the Court you shall haue more. *Exit.*

*Rom.* I know you for  
 The worst of spirits, that striue to rob the tombes  
 Of what is their inheritance, from the dead.  
 For vsurers, bred by a riotous peace: 160

That hold the Charter of your wealth & freedome,  
 By being Knaues and Cuckolds that ne're prayd,  
 But when you feare the rich heires will grow wise,  
 To keepe their Lands out of your parchment toyles:  
 And then, the Diuell your father's cald vpon, 165  
 To inuent some ways of *Luxury* ne're thought on.  
 Be gone, and quickly, or Ile leaue no roome  
 Vpon your forehead for your hornes to sprowt on,  
 Without a murmure, or I will vndoe you;  
 For I will beate you honest.

145 G. & S. omit s. d.

149, after *this*, —s. d.; *Beats him* (G.—*Kicks him* (S.

154 and 155 *Are . . . then*—printed as one line in Q.

155, after *then*. —s. d.; *Kicks them* (C., f.

157 *haue*—*hear* (M.

159 *from*—omitted by C., f.

162, after *Cuckolds* —, (C., M.—; (G., S.

162 *ne'er*—*never* (M.

162 *prayd*—*pray* (G.

166 *To*—*T'* (M.

168 *forehead*—*foreheads* (G.

- I Cred.* Thrift forbid. 170  
 We will beare this, rather then hazard that. *Ex: Creditor.*  
*Enter Charloyes.*
- Rom.* I am some-what eas'd in this yet.  
*Char.* (Onely friend)  
 To what vaine purpose do I make my sorrow,  
 Wayte on the triumph of their cruelty?  
 Or teach their pride from my humilitie, 175  
 To thinke it has orecome? They are determin'd  
 What they will do: and it may well become me,  
 To robbe them of the glory they expect  
 From my submisse intreaties.
- Rom.* Thinke not so, Sir,  
 The difficulties that you incounter with, 180  
 Will crowne the vndertaking—Heauen! you weepe:  
 And I could do so too, but that I know,  
 Theres more expected from the sonne and friend  
 Of him, whose fatall losse now shakes our natures,  
 Then fighs, or teares, (in which a village nurse 185  
 Or cunning strumpet, when her knaue is handd,  
 May ouercome vs.) We are men (young Lord)  
 Let vs not do like women. To the Court,  
 And there speake like your birth: wake sleeping iustice,  
 Or dare the Axe. This is a way will fort 190  
 With what you are. I call you not to that  
 I will shrinke from my selfe, I will deferue  
 Your thanks, or suffer with you—O how brauely  
 That fudden fire of anger shewes in you!  
 Giue fuell to it, since you are on a shelfe, 195  
 Of extreme danger suffer like your selfe. *Exeunt.*

171 *then*—this form retained in C.171 s. d. *Creditor*—*Creditors* (G., S.)195 *you are*—*you're* (C., M.)

## [SCENE II]

[*The Court of Justice*]

*Enter Rochfort, Nouall Se. Charmi. Du Croye, Aduocates, Baumont, and Officers, and 3. Presidents.*

*Du Croye.* Your Lordship's feated. May this meeting proue prosperous to vs, and to the generall good Of *Burgundy*.

*Nou. Se.* Speake to the poynt.

*Du Croy.* Which is,  
With honour to dispose the place and power  
Of premier President, which this reuerent man  
Graue *Rochfort*, (whom for honours sake I name) 5  
Is purposed to resigne a place, my Lords,  
In which he hath with such integrity,  
Perform'd the first and best parts of a Iudge,  
That as his life transcends all faire examples 10  
Of such as were before him in *Dijon*,  
So it remains to those that shall succeed him,  
A President they may imitate, but not equall.

*Roch.* I may not fit to heare this.

*Du Croy.* Let the loue  
And thankfulnes we are bound to pay to goodnesse, 15  
In this o'ecome your modestie.

*Roch.* My thanks  
For this great fauour shall preuent your trouble.  
The honourable trust that was impos'd  
Vpon my weaknesse, since you witnesse for me,  
It was not ill discharged, I will not mention, 20  
Nor now, if age had not depriv'd me of  
The little strength I had to gouerne well,

first s. d., 3 Presidents—Presidents, . . . three Creditors (G., S.

1 Lordship's feated. May—lordships seated, may (G., S.

2 and 3 prosperous . . . Burgundy.—printed as a line in Q.

7, after resigne —; (M., f.

13 President—precedent (C., f.

13 President they—precedent that they (C., M.

15 we are—we're (C., M.

The Prouince that I vndertooke, forfake it.

*Nou.* That we could lend you of our yeeres.

*Du Croy.* Or strength.

*Nou.* Or as you are, perfwade you to continue  
The noble exercife of your knowing iudgement. 25

*Roch.* That may not be, nor can your Lordships goodnes,  
Since your employments haue confer'd vpon me  
Sufficient wealth, deny the vse of it,  
And though old age, when one foot's in the graue, 30  
In many, when all humors else are spent  
Feeds no affection in them, but desire  
To adde height to the mountaine of their riches:  
In me it is not fo, I reft content

With the honours, and eftate I now poffeffe, 35  
And that I may haue liberty to vse,  
What Heauen ftill bleffing my poore induftry,  
Hath made me Mafter of: I pray the Court  
To eafe me of my burthen, that I may  
Employ the fmall remainder of my life, 40  
In liuing well, and learning how to dye fo.

*Enter Romont, and Charalois.*

*Rom.* See fir, our Aduocate.

*Du Croy.* The Court intreats,  
Your Lordship will be pleafd to name the man,  
Which you would haue your fucceffor, and in me,  
All promife to confirme it.

*Roch.* I embrace it, 45  
As an affurance of their fauour to me,  
And name my Lord *Nouall*.

*Du Croy.* The Court allows it.

*Roch.* But there are futers waite heere, and their caufes  
May be of more neceffity to be heard,  
And therefore wifh that mine may be defer'd, 50  
And theirs haue hearing.

*Du Croy.* If your Lordship please  
To take the place, we will proceed.

35 *the—th'* (C., M.)

50 *And—I* (G., S.)

51, end —s. d.: *To Nov. sen.* (G., S.)

*Charm.*                                       The cause  
 We come to offer to your Lordships censure,  
 Is in it selfe so noble, that it needs not  
 Or Rhetorique in me that plead, or fauour                                       55  
 From your graue Lordships, to determine of it.  
 Since to the praye of your impartiall iustice  
 (Which guilty, nay condemn'd men, dare not scandall)  
 It will erect a trophy of your mercy  
 With married to that Iustice.

*Nou. Se.*                                       Speaks to the cause.                                       60

*Charm.* I will, my Lord: to say, the late dead Marshall  
 The father of this young Lord heer, my Clyent,  
 Hath done his Country great and faithfull seruice,  
 Might taske me of impertinence to repeat,  
 What your graue Lordships cannot but remember,                                       65  
 He in his life, become indebted to  
 These thriftie men, I will not wrong their credits,  
 By giuing them the attributes they now merit,  
 And fayling by the fortune of the warres,  
 Of meanes to free himselfe, from his ingagements,                                       70  
 He was arrested, and for want of bayle  
 Imprifond at their fuite: and not long after  
 With losse of liberty ended his life.  
 And though it be a Maxime in our Lawes,  
 All suites dye with the person, these mens malice                                       75  
 In death find matter for their hate to worke on,  
 Denying him the decent Rytes of buriall,  
 Which the sworne enemies of the Christian faith  
 Grant freely to their slaues; may it therefore please  
 Your Lordships, so to fashion your decree,                                       80  
 That what their crueltie doth forbid, your pittie  
 May giue allowance to.

*Nou. Se.*                                       How long haue you Sir  
 Practis'd in Court?

*Charmi.*                                       Some twenty yeeres, my Lord.

60 *With—Which* (C., M., G.)

64 *taske—tax* (M.)

66 *become—became* (M., f.)

76 *find—finds* (G., S.)

82 and 83 *How . . . Court?*—printed as one line in Q.

*Nou. Se.* By your groffe ignorance it fhould appeare,  
Not twentie dayes.

*Charmi.* I hope I haue giuen no caufe 85  
In this, my Lord—

*Nou. Se.* How dare you moue the Court,  
To the difpenfing with an Act confirmd  
By Parliament, to the terror of all banquerouts?  
Go home, and with more care perufe the Statutes :  
Or the next motion fauoring of this boldneffe, 90  
May force you to leape (againft your will)  
Ouer the place you plead at.

*Charmi.* I forefaw this.

*Rom.* Why does your Lordfhip thinke, the mouing of  
A caufe more honeft then this Court had euer  
The honor to determine, can deferue 95  
A checke like this?

*Nou. Se.* Strange boldnes!

*Rom.* Tis fit freedome:  
Or do you conclude, an aduocate cannot hold  
His credit with the Iudge, vnleffe he ftudy  
His face more then the caufe for which he pleades?

*Charmi.* Forbear.

*Rom.* Or cannot you, that haue the power 100  
To qualifie the rigour of the Lawes,  
When you are pleafed, take a little from  
The ftrictneffe of your fowre decrees, enacted  
In fauor of the greedy creditors  
Againft the orethrowne debter?

*Nou. Se.* Sirra, you that prate 105  
Thus fawcily, what are you?

*Rom.* Why Ile tell you,  
Thou purple-colour'd man, I am one to whom  
Thou oweft the meanes thou haft of fitting there  
A corrupt Elder.

*Charmi.* Forbear.

85 and 86 *I hope . . . Lord—* —printed as one line in Q.

91, after *you* —G. & S. insert , *sir*,

93, after *Why* —, (C., f.

106 *tell you—tell thee* (G.

107 *I am—I'm* (C., M.



*Rom.* The nose thou wear.st, is my gift, and those eyes 110  
 That meete no obiect so base as their Master,  
 Had bin, long since, torne from that guiltie head,  
 And thou thy selfe flauē to some needy Swiffe,  
 Had I not worne a sword, and vs'd it better  
 Then in thy prayers thou ere didst thy tongue. 115

*Nou. Se.* Shall such an Infolence passe vnpunisht?

*Charmi.*

Heere mee.

*Rom.* Yet I, that in my seruice done my Country,  
 Disdainē to bee put in the scale with thee,  
 Confesse my selfe vnworthy to bee valued  
 With the least part, nay haire of the dead Marshell, 120  
 Of whose so many glorious vndertakings,  
 Make choice of any one, and that the meanest  
 Performd against the subtill Fox of France,  
 The politique *Lewis*, or the more desperate Swiffe,  
 And 'twyll outwaygh all the good purpose, 125  
 Though put in act, that euer Gowneman practizd.

*Nou. Se.* Away with him to prison.

*Rom.*

If that curses,

Vrg'd iustly, and breath'd forth so, euer fell  
 On those that did deserue them; let not mine  
 Be spent in vaine now, that thou from this instant 130  
 Mayest in thy feare that they will fall vpon thee,  
 Be sensible of the plagues they shall bring with them.  
 And for denying of a little earth,  
 To couer what remaines of our great foldyer:  
 May all your wiues proue whores, your factors theeues, 135  
 And while you liue, your riotous heires vndoe you,  
 And thou, the patron of their cruelty.  
 Of all thy Lordships liue not to be owner  
 Of so much dung as will conceale a Dog,  
 Or what is worfe, thy selfe in. And thy yeeres, 140  
 To th' end thou mayst be wretched, I wish many,  
 And as thou hast denied the dead a graue,  
 May misery in thy life make thee desire one,  
 Which men and all the Elements keepe from thee:

115 *ere—ever* (C., M., G.)

125 *purpose—purposes* (G., S.)

I haue begun well, imitate, exceed. 145  
*Roch.* Good counfayle were it, a prayfe worthy deed. *Ex.*  
*Du Croye.* Remember what we are. *Officers with Rom.*  
*Chara.* Thus low my duty

Anfweres your Lordships counfaile. I will vse  
 In the few words (with which I am to trouble  
 Your Lordships eares) the temper that you wifh mee, 150  
 Not that I feare to fpeake my thoughts as lowd,  
 And with a liberty beyond *Romont*:  
 But that I know, for me that am made vp  
 Of all that's wretched, fo to hafte my end,  
 Would feeme to moft, rather a willingneffe 155  
 To quit the burthen of a hopeleffe life,  
 Then fcorne of death, or duty to the dead.  
 I therefore bring the tribute of my prayfe  
 To your feueritie, and commend the Iuftice,  
 That will not for the many feruices 160  
 That any man hath done the Common wealth  
 Winke at his leaft of ills: what though my father  
 Writ man before he was fo, and confirmd it,  
 By numbring that day, no part of his life,  
 In which he did not feruice to his Country; 165  
 Was he to be free therefore from the Lawes,  
 And ceremonious forme in your decrees?  
 Or elfe becaufe he did as much as man  
 In thofe three memorable ouerthrowes  
 At *Granfon, Morat, Nancy*, where his Mafter,  
 The warlike *Charloyes* (with whose miffortunes  
 I beare his name) loft treafure, men and life,  
 To be excuf'd, from payment of thofe fummes  
 Which (his owne patri mony fpent) his zeale,  
 To ferue his Country, forc'd him to take vp? 175  
*Nou. Se.* The prefident were ill.  
*Chara.* And yet, my Lord, this much  
 I know youll grant; After thofe great defeatures,  
 Which in their dreadfull ruines buried quick, *Enter officers.*  
 Courage and hope, in all men but himfelfe,

145, end —s. d.: *Aside to Charalois* (G., S.146 C., f. insert, after *counfayle* and omit, after *it*.

He forst the proud foe, in his height of conquest,  
To yield vnto an honourable peace. 180

And in it faued an hundred thousand liues,  
To end his owne, that was sure prooffe against  
The scalding Summers heate, and Winters frost,  
Illayres, the Cannon, and the enemies sword,  
In a most loathsome prifon. 185

*Du Croy.* Twas his fault  
To be fo prodigall.

*Nou. Se.* He had frô the fiate  
Sufficent entertainment for the Army.

*Char.* Sufficent? My Lord, you fit at home,  
And though your fees are boundlesse at the barre: 190  
Are thriftie in the charges of the warre,  
But your wills be obeyd. To these I turne,  
To these soft-hearted men, that wifely know  
They are onely good men, that pay what they owe.

*2 Cred.* And fo they are.

*1 Cred.* 'Tis the City Doctrine,  
We stand bound to maintaine it. 195

*Char.* Be constant in it,  
And since you are as mercilesse in your natures,  
As safe, and mercenary in your meanes  
By which you get your wealth, I will not vrge  
The Court to take away one scruple from 200  
The right of their lawes, or one good thought  
In you to mend your disposition with.  
I know there is no musique in your eares  
So pleasing as the groanes of men in prifon,  
And that the teares of widows, and the cries 205

180 *proud*—S. omits.

185 *enemies*—enemy's (C., f.)

186—'8 Lines in Q. are: *In . . . prifon. | Twas . . . prodigall. | He . . .*

*Army.*

187 *frô*—*from* (C., f.)

189 *Sufficent? My Lord,*—*Sufficent, my Lord?* (C., f. G. & S. have *lords.*)

194 *They are*—*They're* (M., f.)

195 *'Tis*—*It is* (G., S.)

201 *right*—See Notes; after *or* —G. inserts *wish* in brackets, which S. accepts in text.

Of famish'd Orphants, are the feasts that take you.  
 That to be in your danger, with more care  
 Should be auoyded, then infectious ayre,  
 The loath'd embraces of diseas'd women,  
 A flatterers poyson, or the losse of honour. 210  
 Yet rather then my fathers reuerent duft  
 Shall want a place in that faire monument,  
 In which our noble Ancestors lye intomb'd,  
 Before the Court I offer vp my selfe  
 A prifoner for it: loade me with those yrons 215  
 That haue worne out his life, in my best strength  
 Ile run to th' incounter of cold hunger,  
 And choose my dwelling where no Sun dares enter,  
 So he may be releas'd.

*I Cred.* What meane you fir?

*2 Aduo.* Onely your fee againe: ther's fo much sayd 220  
 Already in this cause, and sayd fo well,  
 That should I onely offer to speake in it,  
 I should not bee heard, or laught at for it.

*I Cred.* 'Tis the first mony aduocate ere gaue backe,  
 Though hee sayd nothing.

*Roch.* Be aduis'd, young Lord, 225  
 And well confiderate, you throw away  
 Your liberty, and ioyes of life together:  
 Your bounty is employd vpon a subiect  
 That is not sensible of it, with which, wife man  
 Neuer abus'd his goodnesse; the great vertues 230  
 Of your dead father vindicate themselues,  
 From these mens malice, and breake ope the prifon,  
 Though it containe his body.

*Nou. Se.* Let him alone,  
 If he loue Lords, a Gods name let him weare 'em,  
 Prouided these consent.

217 *th' incounter—the incounter* (C., f.

217, after *cold* —, (G., S.—a plausible but unnecessary emendation.

223 *not be—be or not* (G.—*or. not be* (S.

234 *Lords—cords* (C., f.

234 *a—in* (G., S.

234 *'em—them* (G., S.

*Char.* I hope they are not  
 So ignorant in any way of profit,  
 As to neglect a possibility  
 To get their owne, by feeking it from that  
 Which can returne them nothing, but ill fame,  
 And curses for their barbarous cruelties. 235

*3 Cred.* What thinke you of the offer?

*2 Cred.* Very well.

*1 Cred.* Accept it by all meanes: let's shut him vp,  
 He is well-shaped and has a villanous tongue,  
 And should he study that way of reuenge,  
 As I dare almost sweare he loues a wench, 245  
 We haue no wiues, nor neuer shall get daughters  
 That will hold out against him.

*Du Croy.* What's your answer?

*2 Cred.* Speake you for all.

*1 Cred.* Why let our executions

That lye vpon the father, bee return'd  
 Vpon the sonne, and we releafe the body. 250

*Nou. Se.* The Court must grant you that.

*Char.* I thanke your Lordships,  
 They haue in it confirm'd on me such glory,  
 As no time can take from me: I am ready,  
 Come lead me where you please: captiuitie  
 That comes with honour, is true liberty. 255

*Exit Charmi, Cred. & Officers.*

*Nou. Se.* Strange rashnesse.

*Roch.* A braue resolution rather,  
 Worthy a better fortune, but howeuer  
 It is not now to be disputed, therefore  
 To my owne cause. Already I haue found  
 Your Lordships bountifull in your fauours to me; 260  
 And that should teach my modesty to end heere  
 And presse your loues no further.

243 *n* in *tongue* inverted in Q.

244 *u* in *reuenge* inverted in Q.

246 *never—ever* (C., M.)

247 *n* in *answer* inverted in Q.

After 255, s. d.: C. & M. substitute *Charalois* for *Charmi*; G. & S. insert *Charalois* before *Charmi*.

- Du Croy.* There is nothing  
The Court can grant, but with affurance you  
May aske it and obtaine it.
- Roch.* You incourage  
A bold Petitioner, and 'tis not fit 265  
Your fauours should be loft. Besides, 'tas beene  
A custome many yeeres, at the surrenting  
The place I now giue vp, to grant the Prefident  
One boone, that parted with it. And to confirme  
Your grace towards me, against all such as may 270  
Detract my actions, and life hereafter,  
I now preferre it to you.
- Du Croy.* Speake it freely.
- Roch.* I then desire the liberty of *Romont*,  
And that my Lord *Nouall*, whose priuate wrong  
Was equall to the iniurie that was done 275  
To the dignity of the Court, will pardon it,  
And now signe his enlargement.
- Nou. Se.* Pray you demand  
The moyety of my estate, or any thing  
Within my power, but this.
- Roch.* Am I denyed then—  
My first and last request?
- Du Croy.* It muft not be. 280
- 2 Pre.* I haue a voyce to giue in it.
- 3 Pre.* And I.  
And if perswasion will not worke him to it,  
We will make knowne our power.
- Nou. Se.* You are too violent,  
You shall haue my consent—But would you had  
Made tryall of my loue in any thing 285  
But this, you should haue found then—But it skills not.  
You haue what you desire.
- Roch.* I thanke your Lordships.
- Du Croy.* The court is vp, make way. *Ex. omnes, praeter*

264 and 265 *You . . . fit*—printed as one line in Q.

266 *'tas—'t has* (C., M., S.; *'tas* (G.

279 and 280 *Am . . . request?*—printed as one line in Q.

- Roch.* I follow you— *Roch. & Beaumont.*  
*Baumont.*  
*Baum.* My Lord.  
*Roch.* You are a fcholler, *Baumont,*  
 And can fearch deeper into th' intents of men, 290  
 Then thofe that are leffe knowing—How appear'd  
 The piety and braue behauior of  
 Young *Charloyes* to you?  
*Baum.* It is my wonder,  
 Since I want language to exprefse it fully;  
 And fure the Collonell—  
*Roch.* Fie! he was faulty— 295  
 What prefent mony haue I?  
*Baum.* There is no want  
 Of any fumme a priuate man has ufe for.  
*Roch.* 'Tis well:  
 I am ftrangely taken with this *Charaloyes*;  
 Me thinks, from his example, the whole age  
 Should learne to be good, and continue fo. 300  
 Vertue workes ftrangely with vs: and his goodneffe  
 Rifing about his fortune, feemes to me  
 Princelike, to will, not afke a courtefie. *Exeunt.*

288 and 289 *I follow you*—*Baumont*—printed as one line in Q.

290 *th'*—the (G., S.

295 and 296 *Fie . . . I?*—printed as one line in Q.

296 *There is*—*There's* (G., S.

*Act. secundus. Scæna prima:*

[*A Street before the Prison*]

*Enter Pontalier, Malotin, Baumont.*

*Mal.* **T**IS strange.

*Baum.* Me thinks fo.

*Pont.* In a man, but young,

Yet old in iudgement, theorique, and practicke

In all humanity (and to increafe the wonder)

Religious, yet a Souldier, that he should

Yeeld his free liuing youth a captiue, for

5

The freedome of his aged fathers Corpses,

And rather choofe to want lifes necessaries,

Liberty, hope of fortune, then it should

In death be kept from Christian ceremony.

*Malo.* Come, 'Tis a golden president in a Sonne,

10

To let strong nature haue the better hand,

(In such a case) of all affected reason.

What yeeres fits on this Charolois?

*Baum.* Twenty eight,

For since the clocke did strike him 17 old

Vnder his fathers wing, this Sonne hath fought,

15

Seru'd and commanded, and so aptly both,

That sometimes he appear'd his fathers father,

And neuer lesse then's sonne; the old man's vertues

So recent in him, as the world may sweare,

Nought but a faire tree, could such fayre fruit beare.

20

*Pont.* But wherefore lets he such a barbarous law,

And men more barbarous to execute it,

2 *m* in iudgement inverted in Q.

13 *fits*—*fit* (C., f.)

13 and 14 *Twenty eight . . . old*—printed as one line in Q.

18 *then's*—than his (M.)



Preuaile on his soft difpofition,  
 That he had rather dye aliuie for debt  
 Of the old man in prifon, then he should  
 Rob him of Sepulture, confidering  
 Thefe monies borrow'd bought the lenders peace,  
 And all their meanes they inioy, nor was diffus'd  
 In any impious or licencious path?

*Bau.* True: for my part, were it my fathers trunkes,  
 The tyrannous Ram-heads, with their hornes should gore it,  
 Or, caft it to their cures (than they) leffe curriffh,  
 Ere prey on me fo, with their Lion-law,  
 Being in my free will (as in his) to fhun it.

*Pont.* Alaffe! he knowes him felfe (in pouerty) loft:  
 For in this parcial auaricious age  
 What price beares Honor? Vertue? Long agoe  
 It was but prays'd, and freez'd, but now a dayes  
 'Tis colder far, and has, nor loue, nor praife,  
 Very prayfe now freezeth too: for nature  
 Did make the heathen, far more Christian then,  
 Then knowledge vs (leffe heathenifh) Christian.

*Malo.* This morning is the funerall.

*Pont.*

Certainely!

And from this prifon 'twas the fonnes requeft  
 That his deare father might interment haue. *Recorders*  
 See, the young fonne interd a liuely graue. *Mufique,*

*Baum.* They come, obferue their order.

*Enter Funerall. Body borne by 4. Captaines and Souldiers,*

25 *he—they* (C., M., G.)

28 *their—the* (G., S.)

28 *was—were* (G., S.)

40 G. & S. insert *The* at beginning of line.

43, after *funerall* . —? (G., S.)

44 and 45 G. & S. punctuate with . at end of 44 and , at end of 45. The emendation is plausible, even probable, but not warranted by necessity.

45 and 46 G. & S. omit s. d., *Recorders Mufique,*

46 *interd—interr'd* (M.—*enter'd* (G., S. See Notes.

After 47, s. d.—G. & S. render: *Solemn music. Enter the Funeral Procession. The Coffin borne by four, preceded by a Priest. Captains, Lieutenants, Ensigns, and Soldiers; Mourners, Scutcheons &c., and very good order. Romont and Charalois, followed by the Gaolers and Officers, with Creditors, meet it.*

*Mourners, Scutchions, and very good order. Charolois,  
and Romont meet it. Char. speaks. Rom. weeping,  
folemne Mufique, 3 Creditors.*

*Char.* How like a filent ftream shaded with night,  
And gliding foftly with our windy fighes ;  
Moues the whole frame of this folemnity ! 50  
Teares, fighs, and blackes, filling the fimily,  
Whilft I the onely murntur in this groue  
Of death, thus hollowly break forth ! Vouchfafe  
To ftay a while, reft, reft in peace, deare earth,  
Thou that brought'it reft to their vnthankfull lyues, 55  
Whofe cruelty deny'd thee reft in death :  
Heere ftands thy poore Executor thy fonne,  
That makes his life prifoner, to bale thy death ;  
Who gladlier puts on this captiuity,  
Then Virgins long in loue, their wedding weeds : 60  
Of all that euer thou haft done good to,  
Thefe onely haue good memories, for they  
Remember beft, forget not gratitude.  
I thanke you for this laft and friendly loue.  
And tho this Country, like a viperous mother, 65  
Not onely hath eate vp vngratefully  
All meanes of thee her fonne, but laft thy felfe,  
Leauing thy heire fo bare and indigent,  
He cannot rayfe thee a poore Monument,  
Such as a flatterer, or a vfrer hath. 70  
Thy worth, in euery honeft breft buyldes one,  
Making their friendly hearts thy funerall ftone.

*Pont. Sir.*

*Char.* Peace, O peace, this fceane is wholly mine.  
What weepe ye, fouldiers ? Blanch not, *Romont* weepes. 75  
Ha, let me fee, my miracle is eaf'd,  
The iaylors and the creditors do weepe ;  
Euen they that make vs weepe, do weepe themfelues.  
Be thefe thy bodies balme : thefe and thy vertue  
Keepe thy fame euer odoriferous, 80

After 53 G. & S. insert s. d.: *To the Bearers, who set down the Coffin.*

After 64 G. & S. insert s. d.: *To the Soldiers.*

75, after *What* —! (C., f.

Whilft the great, proud, rich, vnderferuing man,  
 Aliue ftinkes in his vices, and being vanifh'd,  
 The golden calfe that was an Idoll dect  
 With marble pillars Iet, and Porphyrie,  
 Shall quickly both in bone and name confume,  
 Though wrapt in lead, fpice, Searecloth and perfume

1 *Cred.* Sir.

*Char.* What! Away for fhame: you prophane rogues  
 Muft not be mingled with thefe holy reliques:

This is a Sacrifice, our fhovre fhall crowne  
 His fepulcher with Oliue, Myrrh and Bayes  
 The plants of peace, of forrow, victorie,  
 Your teares would fpring but weedes.

1 *Cred.* Would they not fo?

Wee'll keepe them to ftrop bottles then:

*Rom.* No; keepe 'em

For your owne fins, you Rogues, till you repent:  
 You'll dye elfe and be damn'd.

2 *Cred.* Damn'd, ha! ha, ha.

*Rom.* Laugh yee?

3 *Cred.* Yes faith, Sir, weel'd be very glad

To pleafe you eyther way.

1 *Cred.* Y'are ne're content,

Crying nor laughing.

*Rom.* Both with a birth fhee rogues.

2 *Cred.* Our wiues, Sir, taught vs. 100

*Rom.* Looke, looke, you flaues, your thankleffe cruelty  
 And fauage manners, of vnkind *Dijon*,  
 Exhaust thefe flouds, and not his fathers death.

1 *Cred.* Slid, Sir, what would yee, ye'are fo cholericke?

93 *Would they not fo?—Would they fo?* (C., M., G.—*Would they?*  
*Not so.* (S. See Notes.

94, 95, and 96 Lines in Q.: *Wee'll . . . then: | No . . . Rogues, | Till . . .*  
*damn'd. | Damn'd . . . ha.*

94 'em—them (G., S.

95 *Rogues—rogue* (S.

97 *weel'd—we would* (M., f.

98 *Y'are—Ye're* (C., M.—*You are* (G., S.

100 *fhee—ye* (M., f. The emendation is probably correct.

100, after rogues. —? (G., S.

104 *yee, ye'are—you, you're* (C., M., G.

2 *Cred.* Most foldiers are fo yfaith, let him alone: 105  
 They haue little elfe to liue on, we haue not had  
 A penny of him, haue we?

3 *Cred.* 'Slight, wo'd you haue our hearts?

1 *Cred.* We haue nothing but his body heere in durance  
 For all our mony.

*Priest.* On.

*Char.* One moment more,  
 But to bestow a few poore legacies, 110

All I haue left in my dead fathers rights,  
 And I haue done. Captaine, weare thou these spurs  
 That yet ne're made his horse runne from a foe.  
 Lieutenant, thou, this Scarfe, and may it tye  
 Thy valor, and thy honestie together: 115

For so it did in him. Ensigne, this Curace  
 Your Generalls necklace once. You gentle Bearers,  
 Deuide this purse of gold, this other, frow  
 Among the poore: t is all I haue. *Romont,*  
 (Weare thou this medall of himselfe) that like 120

A hearty Oake, grew't close to this tall Pine,  
 Euen in the wildest wildernes of war,  
 Whereon foes broke their swords, and tyr'd themselues;  
 Wounded and hack'd yee were, but neuer fell'd.  
 For me my portion prouide in Heauen: 125

My roote is earth'd, and I a desolate branch  
 Left scattered in the high way of the world,  
 Trod vnder foot, that might haue bin a Columne,  
 Mainly supparting our demolish'd house,  
 This would I weare as my inheritance. 130

And what hope can arise to me from it,  
 When I and it are both heere prisoners?  
 Onely may this, if euer we be free,  
 Keepe, or redeeme me from all infamie. *Song. Muficke.*

105 2 *Cred.*—1 *Cred.* (M., probably misprint.

106 *They haue*—*They've* (C., M.

106 *We haue*—*We've* (C., f.

108 *We haue*—*we've* (M.

111 *rights*—*right* (M.

132 *both heere*—*here both* (M.

134 s. d.: *Song. Muficke.*—i. e. the First Song, on page 145. —introduced here in text by all editors save Gifford and Coleridge.

1 *Cred.* No farther, looke to 'em at your owne perill. 135

2 *Cred.* No, as they please: their Mafter's a good man.

I would they were the *Burmudas*.

*Saylor.* You must no further.

The prison limits you, and the Creditors

Exact the strictnesse.

*Rom.* Out you wooluish mungrells!

Whose braynes should be knockt out, like dogs in Iuly, 140

Leste your infection payson a whole towne.

*Char.* They grudge our sorrow: your ill wills perforce

Turnes now to Charity: they would not haue vs

Walke too farre mourning, vsurers reliefe

Grievous, if the Debtors haue too much of grieffe. *Exeunt.* 145

## [SCENE II]

[*A Room in Rochfort's House.*]

*Enter Beaumelle: Florimell: Bellapert.*

*Beau.* I prithee tell me, *Florimell*, why do women marry?

*Flor.* Why truly Madam, I thinke, to lye with their husbands.

*Bella.* You are a foole: She lyes, Madam, women marry husbands,  
To lye with other men. 5

*Flor.* Faith eene such a woman wilt thou make. By this  
light, Madam, this wagtaile will spoyle you, if you take  
delight in her licence.

*Beau.* Tis true, *Florimell*: and thou wilt make me too good  
for a yong Lady. What an electuary found my father out for 10  
his daughter, when hee compounded you two my women?  
for thou, *Florimell*, art eene a graine to heauy, simply for a  
wayting Gentlewoman.

*Flor.* And thou *Bellapert*, a graine too light.

135 'em—them (G., S.)

137, after *were* —at inserted by C., f.

137 *Saylor*—misprint for *taylor*,—emended by C., f.

143 *Turnes*—*Turn* (M., f.)

6 *eene*—*even* (G., S.)

12 *eene*—*even* (G., S.)

*Bella.* Well, go thy wayes goodly wifdom, whom no body regards. I wonder, whether be elder thou or thy hood: you thinke, becaufe you ferue my Laydes mother, are 32 yeeres old which is a peepe out, you know. 15

*Flor.* Well fayd, wherligig.

*Bella.* You are deceyu'd: I want a peg ith' middle. 20  
Out of these Prerogatiues! you thinke to be mother of the maydes heere, & mortifie em with prouerbs: goe, goe, gouern the sweet meates, and waigh the Suger, that the wenches steale none: fay your prayers twice a day, and as I take it, you haue performd your function. 25

*Flor.* I may bee euen with you.

*Bell.* Harke, the Court's broke vp. Goe helpe my old Lord out of his Caroch, and scratch his head till dinner time.

*Flor.* Well.

*Exit.*

*Bell.* Fy Madam, how you walke! By my mayden-head 30  
you looke 7 yeeres older then you did this morning: why, there can be nothing vnder the Sunne vanuable, to make you thus a minute.

*Beau.* Ah my sweete Bellapert thou Cabinet  
To all my counfels, thou doft know the caufe 35  
That makes thy Lady wither thus in youth.

*Bel.* Vd'd-light, enioy your wifhes: whilst I liue,  
One way or other you shall crowne your will.  
Would you haue him your husband that you loue,  
And can't not bee? he is your seruant though, 40  
And may performe the office of a husband.

*Beau.* But there is honor, wench.

*Bell.* Such a difeafe  
There is in deed, for which ere I would dy.—

*Beau.* Prethee, distinguish me a mayd & wife.

*Bell.* Faith, Madam, one may beare any mans children, 45  
Tother must beare no mans.

17 *ferue*—*serued* (G., S. See Notes.

18 *Peepe*—*pip* (M., f.

20 *ith'*—*in the* (G., S.

22 *em*—*them* G., S.

37 *Vd'd*—*Uds*—(M., f.

40 *can't*—*can it* (M., f.

*Beau.* What is a husband?

*Bell.* Physicke, that tumbling in your belly, will make you ficke ith' stomacke: the onely distinction betwixt a husband and a feruant is: the first will lye with you, when he please; the last shall lye with you when you please. Pray tell me, Lady, do you loue, to marry after, or would you marry, to loue after. 50

*Beau.* I would meete loue and marriage both at once.

*Bell.* Why then you are out of the fashion, and wilbe contemn'd; for (Ile assure you) there are few women i'th world, but either they haue married first, and loue after, or loue first, and married after: you must do as you may, not as you would: your fathers will is the Goale you must fly to: if a husband approach you, you would haue further off, is he your loue? the lesse neere you. A husband in these days is but a cloake to bee oftner layde vpon your bed, then in your bed. 55 60

*Baum.* Humpe.

*Bell.* Sometimes you may weare him on your shoulder, now and then vnder your arme: but seldome or neuer let him couer you: for 'tis not the fashion. 65

*Enter y. Nouall, Pontalier, Malotin, Lilladam, Aymer.*

*Nou.* Best day to natures curiosity,  
Starre of *Dijum*, the lustre of all *France*,  
Perpetuall spring dwell on thy rosy cheekes,  
Whose breath is perfume to our Continent,  
See *Flora* turn'd in her varieties. 70

*Bell.* Oh diuine Lord!

*Nou.* No autumnne, nor no age euer approach  
This heauenly piece, which nature hauing wrought,

48 *ith'*—in the (G., S.)

49 *please*—*pleases* (C., M., G.)

55 *Ile*—*I will* (G., S.)

55 *i'th*—in the (M., f.)

59 *your*—*you* (M. (in corrigenda at end of vol. 4), f. A correct emendation.)

60 *loue? the lesse neare you.*—*love the less near you?* (M., f.)

63 *Humpe*—*Hum* (C., M.; *Humph* (G., S.)

64, after *shoulder*, —C. & M. insert *and*.

67 *Nou.*—C, f. affix Junior throughout.

71 *turn'd*—*trimm'd* (G., S. Emend. sug. by M.)

She loft her needle and did then despaire,  
Euer to work so liuely and so faire. 75

*Lilad.* Vds light, my Lord one of the purles of your band  
is (without all discipline falne) out of his ranke.

*Nou.* How? I would not for a 1000 crownes she had seen't.  
Deare *Liladam*, reforme it. 80

*Bell.* O Lord: *Per se*, Lord, quinteffence of honour,  
shee walkes not vnder a weede that could deny thee any  
thing.

*Baum.* Prethy peace, wench, thou doft but blow the fire,  
that flames too much already. *Lilad. Aym. trim Nouall,* 85

*Aym.* By gad, my Lord, you haue the diui- | *whilst Bell her*  
nest Taylor of Christendome; he hath made | *Lady.*  
you looke like an Angell in your cloth of Tiffue doublet.

*Pont.* This is a three-leg'd Lord, ther's a fresh assault, oh  
that men should spend time thus! 90

See see, how her blood driues to her heart, and fraight  
vaults to her cheekes againe.

*Malo.* What are these?

*Pont.* One of 'em there the lower is a good, foolish, kna-  
uifh fociable gallimaufry of a man, and has much taught 95

my Lord with finging, hee is master of a musicke house: the  
other is his dressing blocke, vpon whom my Lord layes all  
his cloathes, and fashions, ere he vouchsafes 'em his owne  
perfon; you shall see him i'th morning in the Gally-foyt, at  
noone in the Bullion, i'th euening in *Quirpo*, and all night 100  
in—

*Malo.* A Bawdy house.

*Pont.* If my Lord deny, they deny, if hee affirme, they af-  
firme: they skip into my Lords cast skins some twice a yeere,  
and thus they liue to eate, eate to liue, and liue to prayse my 105  
Lord.

78 *discipline falne*) out—*discipline, fallen out* (C., f.

81 *Lord: Per se, Lord—lord per se, lord!* (G., S.

94 *'em—them* (G., S.

95 *taught—caught* (M., f.

98 *'em—them* (G., S.

99 *i'th—in the* (G., S.

100 *Quirpo*—thus C. & G.; M. & S. read *Querpo*.

104 *skip*—See Notes.

105 *liue to eate*—for *liue*, G. reads *flatters*; S reads *lie*, which is prob-  
ably right.



*Malo.* Good fir, tell me one thing.

*Pont.* What's that?

*Malo.* Dare these men euer fight, on any caufe?

*Pont.* Oh no, 't would spoyle their cloathes, and put their  
bands out of order. 110

*Nou.* *Mrs.*, you heare the news: your father has resign'd  
his Prefidentship to my Lord my father.

*Malo.* And Lord Charolois vndone foreuer.

*Pont.* Troth, 'tis pity, fir.  
A brauer hope of so affur'd a father 115  
Did neuer comfort *France*.

*Lilad.* A good dumbe mourner.

*Aym.* A filent blacke.

As if he had come this Chriftnas from *St. Omers*,

*Nou.* Oh fie vpon him, how he weares his cloathes!  
To see his friends, and return'd after Twelfetyde. 120

*Lilad.* His Colonell lookes finely like a drouer.

*Nou.* That had a winter ly'n perdieu i'th rayne.

*Aym.* What, he that weares a clout about his necke,  
His cuffes in's pocket, and his heart in's mouth?

*Nou.* Now out vpon him!

*Beau.* Seruant, tye my hand. 125  
How your lips blufh, in fcorne that they fould pay  
Tribute to hands, when lips are in the way!

*Nou.* I thus recant, yet now your hand looks white  
Because your lips robd it of fuch a right.

*Mounfieur Aymour*, I prethy fing the fong 130  
Deuoted to my *Mrs.* *Cant.* *Muficke.*

*After the Song, Enter Rochfort, & Baumont.*

*Baum.* *Romont* will come, fir, ftraight.

*Roch.* 'Tis well.

*Beau.* My Father.

*Nouall.* My honorable Lord.

*Roch.* My Lord *Nouall* this is a vertue in you,

112 *Mrs.—Must* (C., M.)

122 *i'th*—in the (G., S.)

125, end —s. d.: *Nov. jun. kisses her hand.* (G., S.)

128, after *recant*, —s. d.: *Kisses her* (G., S.)

131 *Cant.*—i. e. the Second Song, on page 145. —introduced here in  
text by all editors save Gifford and Coleridge.

So early vp and ready before noone, 135  
That are the map of dreiffing through all *France*.

*Nou.* I rife to fay my prayers, fir, heere's my Saint.

*Roch.* Tis well and courtly; you muft giue me leaue,  
I haue some priuate conference with my daughter,  
Pray vfe my garden, you fhall dine with me. 140

*Lilad.* Wee'l waite on you.

*Nou.* Good morne vnto your Lordfhip,  
Remember what you haue vow'd ——— to his *Mrs. Exeunt*

*Beau.* Performe I muft. *omnes praeter Roch. Daug.*

*Roch.* Why how now *Beaumelle*, thou look'ft not well.

Th' art fad of late, come cheere thee, I haue found  
A wholefome remedy for thefe mayden fits, 145

A goodly Oake whereon to twift my vine,  
Till her faire branches grow vp to the ftarres.

Be neere at hand, fucceffe crowne my intent,  
My bufineffe fills my little time fo full,

I cannot ftand to talke: I know, thy duty  
Is handmayd to my will, efpecially 150

When it presents nothing but good and fit.

*Beau.* Sir, I am yours. Oh if my teares proue true, *Exit*  
Fate hath wrong'd loue, and will deftroy me too. *Daug*

*Enter Romont keeper*

*Rom.* Sent you for me, fir?

*Roch.* Yes.

*Rom.* Your Lordfhips pleasure? 155

*Roch.* Keeper, this prifoner I will fee forth comming  
Vpon my word—Sit downe good Colonell. *Exit keeper.*

Why I did wifh you hither, noble fir,  
Is to aduife you from this yron carriage,

Which, fo affected, *Romont*, you weare, 160  
To pity and to counfell yee fubmit

With expedition to the great *Nouall*:

144 *Th' art—Thou art* (G., S.

153 *teares*—thus C. & M.;—G. & S. read *fears*, which seems a fitter word here.

153 s. d.—G. & S. read, *Aside and exit*.

159 *affected*—affectedly (S.

159, after *you* —C., M., & G. insert *will*.

161 *yee—you* (C., f.

Recant your sterne contempt, and flight neglect  
 Of the whole Court, and him, and opportunity,  
 Or you will vndergoe a heauy censure  
 In publique very fhortly. 165

*Rom.* Hum hum: reuerend fir,  
 I haue obseru'd you, and doe know you well,  
 And am now more affraid you know not me,  
 By wishing my submission to *Nouall*,  
 Then I can be of all the bellowing mouthes 170  
 That waite vpon him to pronounce the censure,  
 Could it determine me torments, and flame.  
 Submit, and craue forgiueneffe of a beast?  
 Tis true, this bile of fteate weares purple Tiffue.  
 Is high fed, proud: fo is his Lordships horfe, 175  
 And beares as rich Caparifons. I know,  
 This Elephant carries on his back not onely  
 Towres, Castles, but the ponderous republique,  
 And neuer ftoops for't, with his strong breath trunk  
 Snuffes others titles, Lordships, Offices, 180  
 Wealth, bribes, and lyues, vnder his rauenous iawes.  
 Whats this vnto my freedome? I dare dye;  
 And therefore aske this Cammell, if these blessings  
 (For fo they would be vnderstood by a man)  
 But mollifie one rudeneffe in his nature, 185  
 Sweeten the eager relifh of the law,  
 At whose great helme he fits: helps he the poore  
 In a iust bufineffe? nay, does he not croffe  
 Euery deserued fouldier and scholler,  
 As if when nature made him, she had made 190  
 The generall Antipathy of all vertue?  
 How fauagely, and blasphemoufly hee spake  
 Touching the Generall, the graue Generall dead,

164 *opportunity*—*opportuncly* (M., f. The emendation is probably correct.

165 *Hum hum*—omitted by C., M., & G.

172, after *me* —C. & M. insert *to*.

174 *bile*—*boil* (C., f. See Notes.

179 *breath*—*breath'd* (M., f.

193 *graue*—*brave* (M., f.

I muſt weepe when I thinke on't.

*Roch.*

Sir

*Rom.*

My Lord,

I am not ſtubborne, I can melt, you ſee, 195

And prize a vertue better then my life :

For though I be not learnd, I euer lou'd

That holy Mother of all iffues, good,

Whoſe white hand (for a Scepter) holds a File

To pollifh rougheſt cuſtomes, and in you 200

She has her right: ſee, I am calme as fleepe,

But when I thinke of the groſſe iniuries

The godleſſe wrong done, to my Generall dead,

I raue indeed, and could eate this Nouall

A lfoule-eſſe Dromodary.

*Roch.*

Oh bee temperate,

205

Sir, though I would perſwade, I'le not conſtraine :

Each mans opinion freely is his owne,

Concerning any thing or any body,

Be it right or wrong, tis at the Iudges perill.

*Enter Baumond,*

*Bau.* Theſe men, Sir, waite without, my Lord is come too. 210

*Roch.* Pay 'em thoſe fummcs vpon the table, take

Their full releaſes: ſtay, I want a witneſſe :

Let mee intreat you Colonell, to walke in,

And ſtand but by, to ſee this money pay'd.

It does concerne you and your friends, it was 215

The better cauſe you were ſent for, though ſayd otherwiſe.

The deed ſhall make this my requeſt more plaine.

*Rom.* I ſhall obey your pleaſure Sir, though ignorant

To what is tends?

*Exit Seruant: Romont.*

*Roch.* Worthieft Sir,

*Enter Charolois.* 220

You are moſt welcome: fye, no more of this :

You haue out-wept a woman, noble Charolois.

194 and 195 *My Lord . . . ſee*,—printed as one line in Q.

198, after *iffues* —M., f. omit „. A correct emendation.

205 *lfoule-eſſe*—misprint for *soul-less*—corrected by C., f.

211 *'em*—*them* (G., S.)

215 *friends*—*friend* (M., f.)

219 *is—it* (C., f.)

219 s. d., *Seruant*—*Beaumont* (G., S.)

No man but has, or muft bury a father.

*Char.* Graue Sir, I buried forrow, for his death,  
In the graue with him. I did neuer thinke  
Hee was immortall, though I vow I grieue,  
And fee no reafon why the vicious,  
Vertuous, valiant and vnworthy man  
Should dye alike. 225

*Roch.* They do not.

*Char.* In the manner  
Of dying, Sir, they do not, but all dye,  
And therein differ not: but I haue done. 230  
I fpy'd the liuely picture of my father,  
Paffing your gallery, and that caft this water  
Into mine eyes: fee, foolifh that I am,  
To let it doe fo.

*Roch.* Sweete and gentle nature,  
How filken is this well comparatiuely 235  
To other men! I haue a fuite to you Sir.

*Char.* Take it, tis granted.

*Roch.* What?

*Char.* Nothing, my Lord.

*Roch.* Nothing is quickly granted.

*Char.* Faith, my Lord,

That nothing granted, is euen all I haue,  
For (all know) I haue nothing left to grant. 240

*Roch.* Sir, ha' you any fuite to me? Ill grant  
You fomething, any thing.

*Char.* Nay furely, I that can  
Giue nothing, will but fue for that againe. 245  
No man will grant mee any thing I fue for.  
But begging nothing, euery man will giue't.

*Roch.* Sir, the loue I bore your father, and the worth  
I fee in you, fo much refembling his,  
Made me thus fend for you. And tender heere *Drawes a* 250  
What euer you will take, gold, Iewels, both, *Curtaigne.*

228 *man*—*Men* (C., M.)

242 *ha'*—*have* (C., f.)

250 s. d.: *Drawes a Curtaigne*.—G. & S. add, and discovers a table with  
money and jewels upon it.

All, to supply your wants, and free your selfe.  
 Where heauenly vertue in high bloued veines  
 Is lodg'd, and can agree, men should kneele downe,  
 Adore, and sacrifice all that they haue; 255

And well they may, it is so seldome seene.  
 Put off your wonder, and heere freely take  
 Or fend your seruants. Nor, Sir, shall you vse  
 In ought of this, a poore mans fee, or bribe,  
 Vniustly taken of the rich, but what's 260  
 Directly gotten, and yet by the Law.

*Char.* How ill, Sir, it becomes those hairees to mocke?

*Roch.* Mocke? thunder strike mee then.

*Char.* You doe amaze mee:

But you shall wonder too, I will not take  
 One single piece of this great heape: why should I 265  
 Borrow, that haue not meanes to pay, nay am  
 A very bankrupt, euen in flattering hope  
 Of euer rayfing any. All my begging,

Is *Romonts* libertie. *Enter Romont, Creditors loaden with*

*Roch.* Heere is your friend, *mony.* *Baumont.*

Enfranchist ere you spake. I giue him you, 270

And *Charolois.* I giue you to your friend

As free a man as hee; your fathers debts

Are taken off.

*Char.* How?

*Rom.* Sir, it is most true.

I am the witness.

*1 Cred.* Yes faith, wee are pay'd.

*2 Cred.* Heauen bleffe his Lordship, I did thinke him wifer. 275

*3 Cred.* He a states-man, he an asse Pay other mens debts?

*1 Cred.* That he was neuer bound for.

*Rom.* One more such

Would faue the rest of pleaders.

*Char.* *Honord Rochfort.*

266 not—no (G.)

269 s. d.—G. & S. omit loaden with mony.

270 Enfranchist—Enfranchisc (C.)

270, after him —G. & S. insert to.

277 and 278 Lines in Q.: *That . . . for.* | *One . . . pleaders.* | *Honord Rochfort.*

Lye still my tounge and bushes, cal'd my cheekes,  
That offer thanks in words, for such great deeds. 280

*Roch.* Call in my daughter: still I haue a fuit to you. *Baum.*  
Would you requite mee. *Exit.*

*Rom.* With his life, assure you.

*Roch.* Nay, would you make me now your debter, Sir.  
This is my onely child: what shee appears, *Enter Baum*  
Your Lordship well may see her education, *Beau.* 285

Followes not any: for her mind, I know it  
To be far fayrer then her shape, and hope  
It will continue so: if now her birth

Be not too meane for Charolois, take her  
This virgin by the hand, and call her wife, 290  
Indowd with all my fortunes: blesse me so,  
Requite mee thus, and make mee happier,  
In ioyning my poore empty name to yours,  
Then if my ftate were multiplied ten fold.

*Char.* Is this the payment, Sir, that you expect? 295  
Why, you participate me more in debt,  
That nothing but my life can euer pay,  
This beautie being your daughter, in which yours  
I must conceiue necessitie of her vertue  
Without all dowry is a Princes ayme, 300

Then, as shee is, for poore and worthlesse I,  
How much too worthy! Waken me, *Romont,*  
That I may know I dream't and find this vanisht

*Rom.* Sure, I sleepe not.

*Roch.* Your sentence life or death.

*Char.* Faire Beaumelle, can you loue me?

- 279 *bushes, cal'd*—*blushes, scald* (C., G., S.—*blushes scald* (M.  
281, end . —, (G., S.  
282, before *assure* —C., M., & G. insert *I*.  
284 s. d. placed by G. & S. *before* instead of *after* line.  
285, after *see* —: (M., f.  
285 *her education*,—*her education, Beaumelle* (C.; & *for education*  
*Beaumelle* (M., these editors taking *Beau.* in Q. s. d. to be in text!  
286 First *l* in *Followes* almost invisible in Q.  
289 *take her*—*take her, take* (G.  
296 *participate*—*precipitate* (C., f.  
301 *I—me* (C., f.  
303 *know*—its *n* is broken in the Q.

- Beau.* Yes, my Lord. *Enter Nouall, Ponta.* 305
- Char.* You need not question me, if I can you. *Malotine,*  
 You are the fayrest virgin in *Digum,* *Lilad. Aymer. All*  
 And *Rochfort* is your father. *falute.*
- Nou.* What's this change?
- Roch.* You met my wifhes, Gentlemen.
- Rom.* What make  
 These dogs in doublets heere?
- Beau.* A Visitation, Sir. 310
- Char.* Then thus, Faire *Beaumelle,* I write my faith  
 Thus feale it in the fight of Heauen and men.  
 Your fingers tye my heart-frings with this touch  
 In true-loue knots, which nought but death fhall loofe.  
 And yet these eares (an Embleme of our loues) 315  
 Like Cristall riuers indiuidually  
 Flow into one another, make one fource,  
 Which neuer man diftinguifh, leffe deuide:  
 Breath, marry, breath, and kifses, mingle foules  
 Two hearts, and bodies, heere incorporate: 320  
 And though with little wooing I haue wonne  
 My future life fhall be a wooing tyme.  
 And euery day, new as the bridall one.  
 Oh Sir I groane vnder your courtesies,  
 More then my fathers bones vnder his wrongs, 325  
 You *Curtius*-like, haue throwne into the gulfe,  
 Of this his Countries foule ingratitude,  
 Your life and fortunes, to redeeme their flames.
- Roch.* No more, my glory, come, let's in and haften  
 This celebration.
- Rom. Mal. Pont. Bau.*  
 All faire bliffe vpon it. 330  
*Exeunt Roch. Char. Rom. Bau. Mal.*

308, end —G. & S. s. d.: *Aside.*

309 *met—meet* (G., S.)

310. *Beau.* This might be either *Beaumelle* or *Beaumont*. The Q. generally spells the latter *Baumont*, but the present speech, none the less, probably belongs to him, and is so assigned by C., f.

315 *yet these eares—yet these tears* (C.—*let these tears* (M., f. The latter emendation is correct.

319 —M., f. punctuate: *Breath marry breath, and kisses mingle souls.*



*Nou.* Miftrefle.

*Beau.* Oh feruant, vertue ftrengthen me.

Thy preſence blowes round my affections vane:

You will vndoe me, if you ſpeake againe. *Exit Beau.*

*Lilad. Aym.* Heere will be ſport for you. This workes.

*Exeunt Lilad. Aym.*

*Nou.*

Peace, peace,

*Pont.* One word, my Lord *Nouall.*

*Nou.* What, thou wouldſt mony; there. 335

*Pont.* No, Ile none, Ile not be bought a flauē,

A Pander, or a Parafite, for all

Your fathers worth, though you haue ſau'd my life,

Reſcued me often from my wants, I muſt not

Winke at your follyes: that will ruine you. 340

You know my blunt way, and my loue to truth:

Forfake the purſuit of this Ladies honour,

Now you doe ſee her made another mans,

And ſuch a mans, ſo good, ſo popular,

Or you will plucke a thouſand miſchiefes on you. 345

The benefits you haue done me, are not loſt,

Nor caſt away, they are purſ'd heere in my heart,

But let me pay you, fir, a fayrer way

Then to defend your vices, or to ſooth 'em.

*Nou.* Ha, ha, ha, what are my courſes vnto thee? 350

Good Couſin *Pontalier*, meddle with that

That ſhall concerne thyſelfe.

*Exit Nouall.*

*Pont.*

No more but ſcorne?

Moue on then, ſtarres, worke your pernicious will.

Only the wife rule, and preuent your ill. *Exit.*

*Hoboyes.*

*Here a paſſage ouer the Stage, while the Act is playing  
for the Marriage of Charalois with  
Beaumelle, & c.*

330 *Miftrefſe*—G. & S. insert s. d.: *As Beaumelle is going out.*

336 1st. *Ile*—*I will* (G., S.)

346 *you haue*—*you've* (C., M.)

349 *'em*—*them* (G., S.)

350 G. & S. omit the third *ha*.

After 354 G. omits s. d., *Hoboyes*.

*Actus tertius. Scaena prima.*

[*A Room in Charalois' House*]

*Enter Nouall Iunior, Bellapert.*

*Nou. Iu.* **F** Lie not to these excuses: thou hast bin  
False in thy promise, and when I haue said  
Vngratefull, all is spoke.

*Bell.* Good my Lord,

But heare me onely.

*Nou.* To what purpose, trifler?

Can anything that thou canst say, make voyd 5  
The marriage? or those pleasures but a dreame,  
Which *Charaloyes* (oh *Venus*) hath enioyd?

*Bell.* I yet could say that you receiue aduantage,  
In what you thinke a losse, would you vouchsafe me 10  
That you were neuer in the way till now  
With safete to arriue at your desires,  
That pleasure makes loue to you vnattended  
By danger or repentance?

*Nou.* That I could.

But apprehend one reason how this might be,  
Hope would not then forsake me.

*Bell.* The enioying 15  
Of what you most desire, I say th' enioying  
Shall, in the full possession of your wishes,  
Confirme that I am faithfull.

*Nou.* Giue some rellish  
How this may appeare possible.

*Bell.* I will

3 *spoke*—*spoken* (G., S.)

3 and 4 *Good . . . onely*.—printed as one line in Q.

9, end —; (C., f.)

13, end . —omitted by M., f.

19, end —. (C., M.—, (G., S. The latter emendation seems preferable.

Rellish, and taste, and make the banquet easie: 20  
 You say my Ladie's married. I confesse it,  
 That Charalois hath inoyed her, 'tis most true  
 That with her, hee's already Master of  
 The best part of my old Lords state. Still better,  
 But that the first, or last, should be your hindrance, 25  
 I vtterly deny: for but obserue me:  
 While she went for, and was, I sweare, a Virgin,  
 What courtesie could she with her honour giue  
 Or you receiue with safaty—take me with you,  
 When I say courtesie, doe not think I meane 30  
 A kisse, the tying of her shoo or garter,  
 An houre of priuate conference: those are trifles.  
 In this word courtesie, we that are gamesters point at  
 The sport direct, where not alone the louer  
 Brings his Artillery, but vses it. 35  
 Which word expounded to you, such a courtesie  
 Doe you expect, and fudden.

*Nou.* But he tasted

The first sweetes, *Bellapert.*

*Bell.* He wrong'd you shrewdly,

He toyl'd to climbe vp to the *Phoenix* nest,  
 And in his prints leaues your ascent more easie. 40  
 I doe not know, you that are perfect Crittiques  
 In womens bookes, may talke of maydenheads.

*Nou.* But for her marriage.

*Bell.* 'Tis a faire protection

'Gainst all arrefts of feare, or shame for euer.  
 Such as are faire, and yet not foolish, studey 45  
 To haue one at thirteene; but they are mad  
 That stay till twenty. Then fir, for the pleasure,  
 To say Adulterie's sweeter, that is stale.  
 This onely is not the contentment more,  
 To say, This is my Cuckold, then my Riual. 50  
 More I could say—but briefly, she doates on you,

22, end —: (C., f.

24 *old*—M. omits.

37 and 38 *But . . . Bellapert.*—printed as one line in Q.

49, after *onely* — — (C., f.

If it proue otherwise, spare not, poyson me  
 With the next gold you giue me. *Enter Beaumely*

*Beau.* Hows this feruant,  
 Courting my woman?

*Bell.* As an entrance to  
 The faour of the mistris: you are together 55  
 And I am perfect in my qu.

*Beau.* Stay *Bellapert.*

*Bell.* In this I must not with your leaue obey you.  
 Your Taylor and your Tire-woman waite without  
 And stay my counsayle, and direction for  
 Your next dayes dressing. I haue much to doe, 60  
 Nor will your Ladiship know, time is precious,  
 Continue idle: this choise Lord will finde  
 So fit employment for you. *Exit Bellap.*

*Beau.* I shall grow angry.

*Nou.* Not so, you haue a iewell in her, Madam.

*Bell.* I had forgot to tell your Ladiship *Enter* 65  
 The closet is priuate and your couch ready: *again.*  
 And if you please that I shall loofe the key,  
 But say so, and tis done. *Exit Bellap.*

*Baum.* You come to chide me, feruant, and bring with you  
 Sufficient warrant, you will say and truly, 70  
 My father found too much obedience in me,  
 By being won too soone: yet if you please  
 But to remember, all my hopes and fortunes  
 Had reuerence to this likening: you will grant  
 That though I did not well towards you, I yet 75  
 Did wifely for my selfe.

*Nou.* With too much feruor  
 I haue so long lou'd and still loue you, Mistresse,  
 To esteeme that an injury to me  
 Which was to you conuenient: that is past

53 and 54 *Hows . . . woman?*—printed as one line in Q.

56, after *qu* —C., f. insert s. d.: *Going*.

61 *know—now* (C., f. A correct emendation.

66, after *couch* —G. suggests to insert *there* in brackets,—accepted by S.

74 *reuerence to this likening—reference to his liking* (M., f. The emendation appears necessary.

My helpe, is past my cure. You yet may, Lady,  
 In recompence of all my dutious seruice,  
 (Prouided that your will anfwere your power)  
 Become my Creditreffe. 80

*Beau.* I vnderftand you,  
 And for affurance, the request you make  
 Shall not be long vnanswered. Pray you fit,  
 And by what you fhall heare, you'l eafily finde, 85  
 My paffions are much fitter to defire,  
 Then to be fued to. *Enter Romont and Florimell.*

*Flor.* Sir, tis not enuy  
 At the ftart my fellow has got of me in  
 My Ladies good opinion, thats the motiue  
 Of this difcouery; but due payment 90  
 Of what I owe her Honour.

*Rom.* So I conceiue it.

*Flo.* I haue obferued too much, nor fhall my filence  
 Preuent the remedy—yonder they are,  
 I dare not bee feene with you. You may doe 95  
 What you thinke fit, which wil be, I prefume,  
 The office of a faithfull and tryed friend  
 To my young Lord. *Exit Flori.*

*Rom.* This is no vifion: ha!

*Nou.* With the next opportunity.

*Beau.* By this kiffe,  
 And this, and this.

*Nou.* That you would euer fweare thus. 100

*Rom.* If I feeme rude, your pardon, Lady; yours  
 I do not afke: come, do not dare to fhew mee  
 A face of anger, or the leaft diflike.  
 Put on, and suddaily a milder looke,  
 I fhall grow rough elfe.

88, after *to* —G. inserts s. d.: *They court.*

88 *Enter Romont and Florimell—Enter Romont and Florimell behind*  
 (G., S)

88 *tis—it is* (G., S.)

91 *but due—but the due* (G., S.)

99, after *opportunity* . —? (G., S.)

99 and 100 The three speeches composing these two lines are printed  
 in Q. severally in three lines.

101, after *Rom.* —G. & S. insert s. d.: *Comes forward.*

- Nou.* What haue I done, Sir, 105  
To draw this harsh vnfaury language from you?  
*Rom.* Done, Popinjay? why, dost thou thinke that if  
I ere had dreamt that thou hadst done me wrong,  
Thou shouldest outliue it?  
*Beau.* This is something more  
Then my Lords friendship giues commiffion for. 110  
*Nou.* Your prefence and the place, makes him presume  
Vpon my patience.  
*Rom.* As if thou ere wer't angry  
But with thy Taylor, and yet that poore fhred  
Can bring more to the making vp of a man,  
Then can be hop'd from thee: thou art his creature, 115  
And did hee not each morning new create [thee]  
Thou wouldst ftinke and be forgotten. Ile not change  
On syllable more with thee, vntill thou bring  
Some testimony vnder good mens hands,  
Thou art a Chriftian. I fufpect thee strongly, 120  
And wilbe fatisfied: till which time, keepe from me.  
The entertainment of your vifitation  
Has made what I intended on a bufineffe.  
*Nou.* So wee fhall meete—Madam.  
*Rom.* Vfe that legge again,  
And Ile cut off the other.  
*Nou.* Very good. *Exit Nouall.* 125  
*Rom.* What a perfume the Muske-cat leaues behind him!  
Do you admit him for a property,  
To faue you charges, Lady.  
*Beau.* Tis not vfeleffe,  
Now you are to fucceed him.  
*Rom.* So I refpect you,

111 *makes—make* (G., S.)116 [*thee*]—so all later editors. The word in the Q. is illegible,—possibly *ye*.117 *Thou wouldst—Thou'dst* (C., f.)123 *on*—i. e., *one*; c. f. line 118. But C. keeps *on*.124 and 125 *Vfe . . . other*.—printed as one line in Q.127 *for—as* (M. in Corrigenda, vol. 4, p. 379, where are supplied ll. 126–130, which are omitted in his text.)

Not for your felfe, but in remembrance of,  
 Who is your father, and whoſe wife you now are,  
 That I chooſe rather not to vnderſtand  
 Your naſty ſcoffe then,—

*Beau.* What, you will not beate mee,  
 If I expound it to you. Heer's a Tyrant  
 Spares neyther man nor woman.

*Rom.* My intents  
 Madam, deferue not this; nor do I ftay  
 To be the whetſtone of your wit: preferue it  
 To ſpend on ſuch, as know how to admire  
 Such coloured ſtuffe. In me there is now ſpeaks to you

As true a friend and ſeruant to your Honour,  
 And one that will with as much hazzard guard it,  
 As euer man did goodneſſe.—But then Lady,  
 You muſt endeauour not alone to bee,  
 But to appeare worthy ſuch loue and ſeruice.

*Beau.* To what tends this?

*Rom.* Why, to this purpoſe, Lady,  
 I do deſire you ſhould proue ſuch a wife  
 To *Charaloyſ* (and ſuch a one hee merits)  
 As Caefar, did hee liue, could not except at,  
 Not onely innocent from crime, but free  
 From all taynt and ſuſpition.

*Beau.* They are baſe  
 That iudge me otherwiſe.

*Rom.* But yet bee carefull.  
 Detraction's a bold monſter, and feares not  
 To wound the fame of Princes, if it find  
 But any blemiſh in their liues to worke on.  
 But Ile bee plainer with you: had the people  
 Bin learnd to ſpeake, but what euen now I ſaw,  
 Their malice out of that would raiſe an engine  
 To ouerthrow your honor. In my fight  
 (With yonder pointed foole I frighted from you)

139 *is*—G. & S. omit. See Notes.

150 and 151 *They . . . otherwiſe*.—printed as one line in Q.

159 *pointed*—*painted* (C., f. See Notes.

You vs'd familiarity beyond 160  
 A modest entertayment: you embrac'd him  
 With too much ardor for a stranger, and  
 Met him with kifses neyther chafte nor comely:  
 But learne you to forget him, as I will  
 Your bounties to him, you will find it fafer 165  
 Rather to be vncourtly, then immodest.  
*Beau.* This prety rag about your necke shews well,  
 And being coorfe and little worth, it fpeakes you,  
 As terrible as thrifty.  
*Rom.* Madam.  
*Beau.* Yes.  
 And this strong belt in which you hang your honor 170  
 Will out-laft twenty fcarfs.  
*Rom.* What meane you, Lady?  
*Beau.* And all elfe about you Cap a pe  
 So vniforme in fpite of handfomneffe,  
 Shews fuch a bold contempt of comelineffe,  
 That tis not ftrange your Laundrefse in the League, 175  
 Grew mad with loue of you.  
*Rom.* Is my free counfayle  
 Anwerd with this ridiculous fcorne?  
*Beau.* Thefe obiects  
 Stole very much of my attention from me,  
 Yet fomething I remember, to fpeake truth,  
 Deceyued grauely, but to little purpofe, 180  
 That almoft would haue made me fweare, fome Curate  
 Had ftolne into the perfon of *Romont*,  
 And in the praife of goodwife honefty,  
 Had read an homely.  
*Rom.* By thy hand.  
*Beau.* And fword,  
 I will make vp your oath, twill want weight elfe. 185  
 You are angry with me, and poore I laugh at it.

172, after *And* —G. suggests to insert *then* in brackets; accepted by S.

175 *League—Leaguer* (M., f.

180 *Deceyued—Delivered* (C., f.

184 *thy—this* (C., f. See Notes.

185 *twill—it will* (G., S.

186 *You are—You're* (C., M.



Do you come from the Campe, which affords onely  
 The conuerfation of caft fuburbe whores,  
 To fet downe to a Lady of my ranke,  
 Lymits of entertainment? 190

*Rom.* Sure a Legion has poffeft this woman.

*Beau.* One ftampe more would do well: yet I defire not  
 You fhould grow horne-mad, till you haue a wife.  
 You are come to warme meate, and perhaps cleane linnen:  
 Feed, weare it, and bee thankfull. For me, know, 195  
 That though a thoufand watches were fet on mee,  
 And you the Mafter-fpy, I yet would vfe,

The liberty that beft likes mee. I will reuell,  
 Feaft, kiffe, imbreace, perhaps grant larger fauours:  
 Yet fuch as liue vpon my meanes, fhall know 200  
 They muft not murmur at it. If my Lord  
 Bee now growne yellow, and has chofe out you  
 To ferue his Iealouzy that way, tell him this,  
 You haue fomething to informe him: *Exit Beau.*

*Rom.* And I will.

Beleeue it wicked one I will. Heare, Heauen, 205  
 But hearing pardon mee: if thefe fruts grow  
 Vpon the treé of marriage, let me fhun it,  
 As a forbidden fweete. An heyre and rich,  
 Young, beautifull, yet adde to this a wife,  
 And I will rather choofe a Spittle finner 210  
 Carted an age before, though three parts rotten,  
 And take it for a bleffing, rather then  
 Be fettered to the hellifh flauery  
 Of fuch an impudence.

*Enter Baumont with writings.*

*Bau.* Collonell, good fortune

To meet you thus: you looke fad, but Ile tell you 215  
 Something that fhall remoue it. Oh how happy  
 Is my Lord *Charaloy*s in his faire bride!

*Rom.* A happy man indeede!—pray you in what?

*Bau.* I dare fweare, you would thinke fo good a Lady,  
 A dower fufficient.

203 *that—this* (G., S.)

204 *You haue—You've* (C., M.)

*Rom.* No doubt. But on. 220

*Bau.* So faire, fo chafte, fo vertuous: fo indeed  
All that is excellent.

*Rom.* Women haue no cunning  
To gull the world.

*Bau.* Yet to all thefe, my Lord  
Her father giues the full addition of  
All he does now poffeffe in *Burgundy*: 225  
Thefe writings to confirme it, are new feal'd  
And I moft fortunate to prefent him with them,  
I muft goe feeke him out, can you direct mee?

*Rom.* You'l finde him breaking a young horfe.

*Bau.* I thanke you. *Exit Baumont.*

*Rom.* I muft do fomething worthy *Charaloy's* friendfhip. 230  
If the were well inclin'd to keepe her fo,  
Deferu'd not thanks: and yet to ftay a woman  
Spur'd headlong by hot luft, to her owne ruine,  
Is harder then to prop a falling towre  
With a deceiuing reed. *Enter Rochfort.*

*Roch.* Some one feeke for me, 235  
As foone as he returnes.

*Rom.* Her father! ha?  
How if I breake this to him? fure it cannot  
Meete with an ill conftitution. His wifedome  
Made powerfull by the authority of a father,  
Will warrant and giue priuiledge to his counfailes. 240  
It fhall be fo—my Lord.

*Roch.* Your friend *Romont*:  
Would you ought with me?

*Rom.* I ftand fo engag'd  
To your fo many fauours, that I hold it  
A breach in thankfulneffe, fhould I not difcouer,

221 *fo indeed*—C. & M. omit *so*; *so—indeed*, (G., S.—The Q. reading is preferable.

222 and 223 *Women . . . world*.—printed as one line in Q.

223, after *world*. —G. & S. s. d.: *Aside*.

231, after *inclin'd* —, (C., f.

235 s. d.—in G. & S.: *Enter Rochfort, fpeaking to a fervant within*.

241 and 242 *Your . . . me?*—printed as one line in Q.

Though with some imputation to my selfe,  
All doubts that may concerne you. 245

*Roch.* The performance  
Will make this protestation worth my thanks.

*Rom.* Then with your patience lend me your attention  
For what I must deliuer, whiſpered onely  
You will with too much grieſe receiue.

*Enter Beaumelle, Bellapert.*

*Beau.* See wench! 250  
Vpon my life as I foreſpake, hee's now  
Preferring his complaint: but be thou perfect,  
And we will fit him.

*Bell.* Feare not mee, pox on him:  
A Captaine turne Informer againſt kiſſing?  
Would he were hang'd vp in his ruſty Armour: 255  
But if our freſh wits cannot turne the plots  
Of ſuch a mouldy murrion on it ſelfe;  
Rich cloathes, choyſe faire, and a true friend at a call,  
With all the pleaſures the night yeelds, forſake vs.

*Roch.* This in my daughter? doe not wrong her.

*Bell.* Now. 260  
Begin. The games afoot, and wee in diſtance.

*Beau.* Tis thy fault, fooliſh girle, pinne on my vaile,  
I will not weare thoſe iewels. Am I not  
Already matcht beyond my hopes? yet ſtill  
You prune and ſet me forth, as if I were 265  
Againe to pleaſe a fuyter.

*Bell.* Tis the courſe  
That our great Ladies take.

*Rom.* A weake excuſe.

*Beau.* Thoſe that are better ſeene, in what concernes  
A Ladies honour and faire fame, condemne it.

250 s. d.—in G. & S.: *Enter Beaumelle and Bellapert, behind.*

254 *turne—turn'd* (M.)

259, end . . . —? (S., probably misprint for !)

260 *This in my daughter?*—S. reads: *This is my daughter!*

260 and 261. Lines in Q.: *This . . . her. | Now begin. | The . . . diſtance.*

262 Before Beaumelle's ſpeech G. & S. insert s. d.: *Comes forward.*

267 *Rom. A weak excuſe.*—G. & S. assign to Beau. with the lines  
which follow. The change is without warrant and makes no improvement  
on Q reading.

You waite well, in your abſence, my Lords friend 270  
The vnderſtanding, graue and wife *Romont*.

*Rom.* Muſt I be ſtill her ſport?

*Beau.* Reproue me for it.

And he has traueled to bring home a iudgement  
Not to be contradicted. You will fay  
My father, that owes more to yeeres then he, 275  
Has brought me vp to muſique, language, Courtſhip,  
And I muſt vſe them. True, but not t'offend,  
Or render me ſuſpected.

*Roch.* Does your fine ſtory  
Begin from this?

*Beau.* I thought a parting kiſſe  
From young *Nouall*, would haue diſpleaſd no more 280  
Then heretofore it hath done; but I finde  
I muſt refrayne ſuch fauours now; looke therefore  
As you are carefull to continue mine,  
That I no more be viſited. Ile endure  
The ſtricteſt courſe of life that iealouſie 285  
Can thinke ſecure enough, ere my behaiour  
Shall call my fame in queſtion.

*Rom.* Ten diſſemblers  
Are in this ſubtile deuill. You beleue this?

*Roch.* So farre that if you trouble me againe  
With a report like this, I ſhall not onely 290  
Iudge you malicious in your diſpoſition,  
But ſtudy to repent what I haue done  
To ſuch a nature.

*Rom.* Why, 'tis exceeding well.

*Roch.* And for you, daughter, off with this, off with it:  
I haue that confidence in your goodneſſe, I, 295  
That I will not conſent to haue you liue  
Like to a Reclufe in a cloyſter: goe  
Call in the gallants, let them make you merry,  
Vſe all fit liberty.

*Bell.* Bleſſing on you.

272, after *ſport* —C. & M. insert s. d.: *Aside*.

272 *Reproue*—Reproved (M., f.

278 and 279 *Does . . . this?*—printed as one line in Q.

If this new preacher with the sword and feather 300  
 Could proue his doctrine for Canonically,  
 We should haue a fine world. *Exit Bellapert.*

*Roch.* Sir, if you please  
 To beare your selfe as fits a Gentleman,  
 The house is at your seruice: but if not,  
 Though you seeke company else where, your absence 305  
 Will not be much lamented— *Exit Rochfort.*

*Rom.* If this be  
 The recompence of striuing to preferue  
 A wanton gigglet honest, very shortly  
 'Twill make all mankinde Panders—Do you smile,  
 Good Lady Loofenes? your whole sex is like you, 310  
 And that man's mad that seekes to better any:  
 What new change haue you next?

*Beau.* Oh, feare not you, sir,  
 Ile shift into a thousand, but I will  
 Conuert your heresie.

*Rom.* What heresie? Speake.

*Beau.* Of keeping a Lady that is married, 315  
 From entertayning seruants.— *Enter Nouall Iu. Mala-*

O, you are welcome. *tine, Liladam, Aymer,*  
*Pontalier.*  
 We any meanes to vex him,  
 And then with welcome follow me. *Exit Beau*

*Nou.* You are tyr'd  
 With your graue exhortations, Collonell.

*Lilad.* How is it? Fayth, your Lordship may doe well, 320  
 To helpe him to some Church-preferment: 'tis  
 Now the fashon, for men of all conditions,  
 How euer they haue liu'd; to end that way.

*Aym.* That face would doe well in a furpleffe.

*Rom.* Rogues,  
 Be silent—or—

300 *the—his* (S.)

316 *you are—you're* (C., M.)

318 s. d.—G. & S. read: *Aside to them, and exit.*

322 *Now the fashon—The fashon now* (G., S.)

324 *Rogues* in Q. begins the succeeding line.

328 *shall—should* (G., S.)

- Pont.* S'death will you suffer this? 325
- Rom.* And you, the master Rogue, the coward rascal,  
I shall be with you suddenly.
- Nou.* *Pontallier,*  
If I should strike him, I know I shall kill him:  
And therefore I would have thee beat him, for  
Hee's good for nothing else.
- Lilad.* His backe 330  
Appeares to me, as it would tire a Beadle,  
And then he has a knotted brow, would bruise  
A courtlike hand to touch it.
- Aym.* Hee looks like  
A Curryer when his hides grown deare.
- Pont.* Take heede  
Hee curry not some of you.
- Nou.* Gods me, hee's angry. 335
- Rom.* I breake no Iests, but I can breake my sword  
About your pates. *Enter Charaloyes and*  
*Lilad.* Heeres more. *Baumont.*
- Aym.* Come let's bee gone,  
Wee are beleaguerd.
- Nou.* Looke they bring vp their troupes.
- Pont.* Will you fit downe  
With this disgrace? You are abus'd most grossely. 340
- Lilad.* I grant you, Sir, we are, and you would have vs  
Stay and be more abus'd.
- Nou.* My Lord, I am sorry,  
Your house is so inhospitable, we must quit it. *Exeunt.*
- Cha.* Prethee Romont, what caus'd this vprore? *Manent*  
*Rom.* Nothing. *Char. Rom.*
- They laugh'd and w'd their scurvy wits vpon mee. 345
- Char.* Come, tis thy Iealous nature: but I wonder  
That you which are an honest man and worthy,  
Should foster this suspicion: no man laughs;  
No one can whiffer, but thou apprehend't

334 *grown—grow* (G., S.)334 and 335 *Take . . . you.*—printed as one line in Q.335 *Gods—Gads* (C., M., G.)339 and 340 *Will . . . disgrace?*—printed as one line in Q.342 *I am—I'm* (C., f.)

His conference and his scorne reflects on thee : 350  
 For my part they should scoffe their thin wits out,  
 So I not heard 'em, beate me, not being there.  
 Leauē, leauē these fits, to conscious men, to such  
 As are obnoxious, to those foolish things  
 As they can gibe at.

*Rom.* Well, Sir.

*Char.* Thou art know'n 355  
 Valiant without detect, right defin'd  
 Which is (as fearing to doe iniury,  
 As tender to endure it) not a brabblers,  
 A swearer.

*Rom.* Pish, pish, what needs this my Lord?  
 If I be knowne none such, how vainly, you 360  
 Do cast away good counsaile? I haue lou'd you,  
 And yet must freely speake; so young a tutor,  
 Fits not so old a Souldier as I am.  
 And I must tell you, t'was in your behalfe  
 I grew intraged thus, yet had rather dye, 365  
 Then open the great cause a syllable further.

*Cha.* In my behalfe? wherein hath *Charalois*  
 Vnfitly so demean'd himselfe, to giue  
 The least occasion to the loosest tongue,  
 To throw aspersions on him, or so weakly 370  
 Protected his owne honor, as it should  
 Need a defence from any but himselfe?  
 They are fools that iudge me by my outward seeming,  
 Why should my gentleneffe beget abuse?  
 The Lion is not angry that does sleepe 375  
 Nor euery man a Coward that can weepe.

350 *reflects—reflect* (G., S.)

352 *'em—them* (C., f.)

352 *beate—bait* (M.)

354 , —omitted by C., f.,—a probably correct emendation.

356 *detect—defect* (C., f.,—a correct emendation.

356 *right—rightly* (M., f.,—an unnecessary emendation for the sense, but probably correct, as it improves the metre.

357 and 358 —the ( )'s are omitted by M., f.

372 *a—C. & M. omit.*

373 *They are—They're* (C., M.)

For Gods sake ſpeake the cauſe.

*Rom.* Not for the world.

Oh it will ſtrike diſeaſe into your bones  
 Beyond the cure of phyſicke, drinke your blood,  
 Rob you of all your reſt, contract your ſight, 380  
 Leaue you no eyes but to ſee miſery,  
 And of your owne, nor ſpeach but to wiſh thus  
 Would I had periſh'd in the priſons iawes:  
 From whence I was redeem'd! twill weare you old,  
 Before you haue experience in that Art, 385  
 That cauſes your affliction.

*Cha.* Thou doſt ſtrike  
 A deathfull coldneſſe to my hearts high heate,  
 And ſhrinkſt my liuer like the *Calenture*.  
 Declare this foe of mine, and lifes, that like  
 A man I may encounter and ſubdue it 390  
 It ſhall not haue one ſuch effect in mee,  
 As thou denouneceſt: with a Souldiers arme,  
 If it be ſtrength, Ile meet it: if a fault  
 Belonging to my mind, Ile cut it off  
 With mine owne reaſon, as a Scholler ſhould 395  
 Speake, though it make mee monſtrous.

*Rom.* Ile dye firſt.  
 Farewell, continue merry, and high Heauen  
 Keepe your wife chaſte.

*Char.* Hump, ſtay and take this wolfe  
 Out of my breſt, that thou haſt lodg'd there, or  
 For euer loſe mee.

*Rom.* Loſe not, Sir, your ſelſe. 400  
 And I will venture—So the dore is faſt. *Locke*  
 Now noble *Charaloyſ*, collect your ſelſe, *the dore.*  
 Summon your ſpirits, muſter all your ſtrength  
 That can belong to man, fiſt paſſion,  
 From euery veine, and whatſoever enſues, 405  
 Vpbraid not me heereafter, as the cauſe of

395, end — (C., f.

396 *Ile—I will* (G.

398 *Hump—Hum* (C., f.

403 *you—C.*, f. make obvious correction to *your*.

405 *whatſoever—whatſoe'er* (M., f.



Icaloufly, difcontent, flaughter and ruine:  
 Make me not parent to finne: you will know  
 This fecret that I burne with.

*Char.* Diuell on't,  
 What fhould it be? *Romont*, I heare you wifh  
 My wifes continuance of Chafity. 410

*Rom.* There was no hurt in that.

*Char.* Why? do you know  
 A likelyhood or poffibility vnto the contrarie?  
*Rom.* I know it not, but doubt it, thefe grounds  
 The feruant of your wife now young *Nouall*, 415  
 The fonne vnto your fathers Enemy

(Which aggrauates my prefumption the more)  
 I haue been warnd of, touching her, nay, feene them  
 Tye heart to heart, one in anothers armes,  
 Multiplying kifles, as if they meant 420

To pofe Arithmeticke, or whose eyes would  
 Bee firft burnt out, with gazing on the others.  
 I faw their mouthes engender, and their palmes  
 Glew'd, as if Loue had lockt them, their words flow  
 And melt each others, like two circling flames, 425  
 Where chafity, like a Phoenix (me thought) burn'd,  
 But left the world nor afhes, nor an heire.

Why ftand you filent thus? what cold dull flegme,  
 As if you had no drop of choller mixt  
 In your whole conftitution, thus preuailes, 430  
 To fix you now, thus ftupid hearing this?

*Cha.* You did not fee 'em on my Couch within,  
 Like George a horfe-backe on her, nor a bed?

*Rom.* Noe.

*Cha.* Ha, ha.

409, after *with* . —? (G., S.

410 *heare*—G. & S. read *heard*. The final *e* is blurred in Q., but certainly *e*, not *d*.

412 and 413 *Why . . . poffibility*—printed as one line in Q.

416 *u* in *your* inverted in Q.

417 *my*—G. & S. omit.

419 *Tye*—*tyed* (G.

432 *'em*—*him* (M., f. See Notes.

- Rom.* Laugh yee? eene fo did your wife,  
And her indulgent father.
- Cha.* They were wife. 435  
Wouldst ha me be a foole?
- Rom.* No, but a man.
- Cha.* There is no dramme of manhood to suspect,  
On such thin ayrie circumstance as this  
Meere complement and courtship. Was this tale  
The hydeous monster which you fo conceal'd? 440  
Away, thou curious impertinent  
And idle searcher of such leane nice toys.  
Goe, thou fedicious fower of debate:  
Fly to such matches, where the bridegroome doubts:  
He holds not worth enough to counteruaile 445  
The vertue and the beauty of his wife.  
Thou buzzing drone that 'bout my eares dost hum,  
To strike thy rankling sting into my heart,  
Whose vemon, time, nor medicine could affwage.  
Thus doe I put thee off, and confident 450  
In mine owne innocency, and desert,  
Dare not conceiue her fo vnreasonable,  
To put *Nouall* in ballance against me,  
An vpstart cran'd vp to the height he has.  
Hence busiebody, thou'rt no friend to me, 455  
That must be kept to a wiues iniury,
- Rom.* Ist possible? farewell, fine, honest man,  
Sweet temper'd Lord adieu: what Apoplexy  
Hath knit fence vp? Is this *Romonts* reward?  
Beare witnes the great spirit of my father, 460  
With what a healthfull hope I administer  
This potion that hath wrought fo virulently,  
I not accuse thy wife of act, but would  
Preuent her *Praccipuce*, to thy dishonour,
- 434 yee—you (C., f.  
434 eene—even (G., S.  
436 ha—have (M., f.  
460 my—thy (C., f.—The emendation is probably correct.  
461 I administer—I did administer (M., f. The Ms. reading may have  
been: *administer'd*.  
464 Praccipuce—precipice (C., f.

Which now thy tardy fluggifhneffe will admit. 465

Would I had feene thee grau'd with thy great Sire,

Ere liue to haue mens marginall fingers point

At Charaloyes, as a lamented ftory.

An Emperour put away his wife for touching

Another man, but thou wouldst haue thine tasted 470

And keepe her (I thinke.) Puffe. I am a fire

To warme a dead man, that wafte out myfelfe.

Bleed—what a plague, a vengeance i'ft to mee,

If you will be a Cuckold? Heere I fhew

A fwords point to thee, this fide you may fhun, 475

Or that: the perrill, if you will runne on,

I cannot helpe it.

*Cha.* Didst thou neuer fee me

Angry, *Romont*?

*Rom.* Yes, and purfue a foe

Like lightening

*Char.* Prethee fee me fo no more.

I can be fo againe. Put vp thy fword, 480

And take thy felfe away, left I draw mine.

*Rom.* Come fright your foes with this: fir, I am your friend,

And dare ftand by you thus.

*Char.* Thou art not my friend,

Or being fo, thou art mad, I muft not buy

Thy friendship at this rate; had I iuft cause, 485

Thou knowst I durst purfue fuch iniury

Through fire, ayre, water, earth, nay, were they all

Shuffled againe to *Chaos*, but ther's none.

Thy skill, *Romont*, confifts in camps, not courts.

Farewell, vnciuill man, let's meet no more. 490

Heere our long web of friendship I vntwift.

Shall I goe whine, walke pale, and locke my wife

For nothing, from her births free liberty,

That open'd mine to me? yes; if I doe

467 *liue—liued* (G., S. See Notes.

471 *Puffe—Phoh* (C., M., G.

473 *Bleed—Blood* (C., M.

482 *this: fir,—this, sir!* (C., G., S.—*this, sir?* (M.

483 *Thou art—Thou'rt* (C., M.

484 *thou art—thou'rt* (C., M.

The name of cuckold then, dog me with scorne. 495  
I am a *Frenchman*, no *Italian* borne. *Exit.*

*Rom.* A dull *Dutch* rather: fall and coole (my blood)  
Boyle not in zeal of thy friends hurt, so high,  
That is so low, and cold himfelfe in't. Woman,  
How strong art thou, how eafily beguild? 500  
How thou doft racke vs by the very hornes?  
Now wealth I fee change manners and the man:  
Something I muft doe mine owne wrath to affwage,  
And note my friendship to an after-age. *Exit.*

*Actus quartus. Scaena prima.*

[*A Room in Novall's House*]

*Enter Nouall Junior, as newly dressed, a Taylor, Barber, Perfumer, Liladam, Aymour, Page.*

*Nou.* **M**End this a little: pox! thou haft burnt me. oh fie vpon't, O Lard, hee has made me smell (for all the world) like a flaxe, or a red headed womans chamber: powder, powder, powder.

*Perf.* Oh sweet Lord! *Nouall sits in a chaire,* 5

*Page.* That's his Perfumer. *Barber orders his haire,*

*Tayl.* Oh deare Lord, *Perfumer giues powder,*

*Page.* That's his Taylor. *Taylor sets his clothese.*

*Nou.* Monsieur *Liladam, Aymour,* how allow you the modell of these clothes? 10

*Aym.* Admirably, admirably, oh sweet Lord! assuredly it's pity the wormes should eate thee.

*Page.* Here's a fine Cell; a Lord, a Taylor, a Perfumer, a Barber, and a paire of Mounfieurs: 3 to 3, as little will in the one, as honesty in the other. S'foote ile into the country againe, learne to speake truth, drinke Ale, and conuerse with my fathers Tenants; here I heare nothing all day, but vpon my soule as I am a Gentleman, and an honest man. 15

*Aym.* I vow and affirme, your Taylor must needs be an expert Geometrician, he has the Longitude, Latitude, Altitude, Profundity, euery Demension of your body, fo- 20

*Enter Nouall, etc.*—G. & S. introduce the scene with the following variant s. d., also omitting s. d. of lines 5-8 of Q.: *Noval junior discovered seated before a looking-glass, with a Barber and Perfumer dressing his hair, while a Tailor adjusts a new suit which he wears. Liladam, Aymer, and a Page attending.*

13 *Cell*—See Notes.

14 *will-wit* (C., f. The emendation is probably correct.

19, end —G. & S. insert s. d.: *Aside*, as also after the speeches of *Page* ending lines, 25, 36, 40, 62, 66, and 70.

quifitely, here's a lace layd as directly, as if truth were a Taylor.

*Page.* That were a miracle.

25

*Lila.* With a haire breadth's errour, ther's a foulder piece cut, and the bafe of a pickadille in *puncto*.

*Aym.* You are right, Mounfieur his veltaments fit: as if they grew vpon him, or art had wrought 'em on the fame loome, as nature fram'd his Lordship as if your Taylor were deeply read in Astrology, and had taken meafure of your honourable body, with a *Iacobs* ftaffe, an *Ephimerides*.

30

*Tayl.* I am bound t'ee Gentlemen.

*Page.* You are deceiu'd, they'll be bound to you, you muft remember to truſt 'em none.

35

*Nou.* Nay, fayth, thou art a reaſonable neat Artificer, giue the diuell his due.

*Page.* I, if hee would but cut the coate according to the cloth ftill.

40

*Nou.* I now want onely my miſters approbation, who is indeed, the moſt polite punctuall Queene of dreſſing in all *Burgundy*. Pah, and makes all other young Ladies appeare, as if they came from boord laſt weeke out of the country, Is't not true, Liladam?

45

*Lila.* True my Lord, as if any thing your Lordship could fay, could be othewriſe then true.

*Nou.* Nay, a my foule, 'tis fo, what fouler obiect in the world, then to ſee a young faire, handſome beauty, vnhandſomely dighted and incongruently accoutred; or a hopefull *Cheualier*, vnmethodically appointed, in the externall ornaments of nature? For euen as the *Index* tels vs the contents of ſtories, and directs to the particular Chapters, euen ſo does the outward habit and ſuperficiall order of garments

50

26 *haire breadth's—hair's breadth's* (C., M., G.—*hair's breadth* (S.

29 *'em—them* (G., S.

30, after *Lordſhip* —; (C., f.

34 *'ee—'ye* (C., f.

36 *'em—them* (G., S.

39 *I—Ay* (G., S.

41 *miſters—miſtreſs's* (C., M.—*miſtreſs'* (G., S.

48 *a—O* (C., M.—*o'* (G., S.

(in man or woman) giue vs a taft of the fpirit, and demon-  
 tratiuely poynt (as it were a manuall note from the margin)  
 all the internall quality, and habiliment of the foule, and  
 there cannot be a more euident, palpable, groffe manifefta-  
 tion of poore degenerate dunghilly blood, and breeding, then  
 rude, vnpolifh'd, difordered and flouenly outfide. 60

*Page.* An admirable! lecture. Oh all you gallants, that hope  
 to be faued by your cloathes, edify, edify.

*Aym.* By the Lard, fweet Lard, thou deferu'it a penfion  
 o' the State.

*Page.* O th' Taylors, two fuch Lords were able to fspread  
 Taylors ore the face of a whole kingdome. 65

*Nou.* Pox a this glaffe! it flatters, I could find in my heart  
 to breake it.

*Page.* O faue the glaffe my Lord, and breake their heads,  
 they are the greater flatterers I affure you. 70

*Aym.* Flatters, detracts, impayres, yet put it by,  
 Left thou deare Lord (*Narciffus*-like) fhould doate  
 Vpon thyfelfe, and dye; and rob the world  
 Of natures copy, that fhe workes forme by.

*Lila.* Oh that I were the Infanta Queene of Europe,  
 Who (but thy felfe fweete Lord) fhouldft marry me. 75

*Nou.* I marry? were there a Queene oth' world, not I.  
 Wedlocke? no padlocke, horfelocke, I weare fpurrs *He*  
 To keepe it off my heeles; yet my *Aymour*, *capers.*  
 Like a free wanton iennet i'th meddows, 80  
 I looke aboute, and neigh, take hedge and ditch,  
 Feede in my neighbours patures, picke my choyce  
 Of all their faire-maïnd-mares: but married once,  
 A man is ftak'd, or pown'd, and cannot graze

59, after *then* —a inserted by C., f.

66 a—the (G.)

67 a—o (G., S.)

71, after *Flatters* , —! (G., S.)

72 *fhould—shouldst* (G., S.)

74 *forme—form* (C., f.)

76 *fhouldft—should* (C., f. See Note on l. 72.)

77 *oth'—o' the* (G., S.)

80 *i'th—in the* (G., S.)

84 *pown'd—pounded* (M.)

Beyond his owne hedge.

*Enter Pontalier, and Malotin.*

*Pont.* I haue waited, fir, 85

Three hours to speake w'ee, and not take it well,

Such magpies are admitted, whilst I daunce

Attendance.

*Lila.* Magpies? what d'ee take me for?

*Pont.* A long thing with a most vnpromising face.

*Aym.* I'll ne're alke him what he takes me for?

*Mal.*

Doe not, fir, 90

For hee'l goe neere to tell you.

*Pont.* Art not thou

A Barber Surgeon?

*Barb.* Yes fira why.

*Pont.* My Lord is forely troubled with two scabs.

*Lila. Aym.* Humph—

*Pont.* I prethee cure him of 'em.

*Nou.* Pifh: no more, 95

Thy gall fure's ouer throwne; these are my Councill,

And we were now in serious discourse.

*Pont.* Of perfume and apparell, can you rise  
And spend 5 houres in dressing talke, with these?

*Nou.* Thou 'idst haue me be a dog: vp, stretch and shake, 100  
And ready for all day.

*Pont.* Sir, would you be  
More curious in preferuing of your honour.  
Trim, 'twere more manly. I am come to wake  
Your reputation, from this lethargy  
You let it sleep in, to perswade, importune, 105

86 *w'ee*—with you (C., M.—*wi' ye* (G., S.

86 *not take it well*—take it not well (C., M.

88 *d'ee*—*d'ye* (C., f.

90 *ne're*—*never* (M., f.

91 and 92 *Art . . . Surgeon?*—printed as one line in Q.

94 *Humph*—*Hum* (G., S.

95 *'em*—*them* (G., S.

96 *ouer throwne*—*overflown* (M., f. See Notes.

100 *Thou' idst*—*Thou'ldst* (C., f.

102, end . —omitted by C., f.

103 G. makes *Trim* last word of line 102, and lengthens *'twere* to *It were*.



Nay, to prouoke you, fir, to call to account  
 This Collonell *Romont*, for the foule wrong  
 Which like a burthen, he hath layd on you,  
 And like a drunken porter, you fleepe vnder.  
 'Tis all the towne talkes, and beleeeue, fir,  
 If your tough fenfe perfift thus, you are vndone,  
 Vtterly loft, you will be fcornd and baffled  
 By euery Lacquay; feafon now your youth,  
 With one braue thing, and it fhall keep the odour  
 Euen to your death, beyond, and on your Tombe,  
 Sent like fweet oyles and Frankincenfe; fir, this life  
 Which once you fau'd, I ne're fince counted mine,  
 I borrow'd it of you; and now will pay it;  
 I tender you the feruice of my fword  
 To beare your challenge, if you'll write, your fate:  
 Ile make mine owne: what ere betide you, I  
 That haue liu'd by you, by your fide will dye.

*Nou.* Ha, ha, would't ha' me challenge poore *Romont*?  
 Fight with clofe breeches, thou mayft think I dare not.  
 Doe not miftake me (cooze) I am very valiant,  
 But valour fhall not make me fuch an Affe.  
 What vie is there of valour (now a dayes?)  
 'Tis fure, or to be kill'd, or to be hang'd.  
 Fight thou as thy minde moues thee, 'tis thy trade,  
 Thou haft nothing elfe to doe; fight with *Romont*?  
 No i'le not fight vnder a Lord.

*Pont.* Farewell, fir,  
 I pittie you.  
 Such louing Lords walke their dead honours graues,  
 For no companions fit, but fooles and knaues.  
 Come *Malotin.* *Exeunt Pont. Mal.*

*Enter Romont.*

- 110 *towne talkes*—*Town-Talk* (C., M.)  
 110, after *beleeeue*—G. & S. insert *it*.  
 111 *you are*—*you're* C., M.  
 116 *Sent*—i. e. *Scent*; so all later editors.  
 123 *ha'*—have (G., S.)  
 125 *I am*—*I'm* (C., M.)  
 131 and 132 *Farewell . . . you.*—printed as one line in Q.  
 133 *louing*—*living* (G., S.)

- Lila.* 'Sfoot, *Colbran*, the low gyant. 135
- Aym.* He has brought a battaile in his face, let's goe.
- Page.* *Colbran* d'ee call him? hee'l make fome of you fmoake,  
I beleeeue.
- Rom.* By your leaue, firs.
- Aym.* Are you a Confort?
- Rom.* D'ee take mee
- For a fidler? ya're deceit'd: Looke. Ile pay you. *Kickes 'em.*
- Page.* It feemes he knows you one, he bumfiddles you fo. 140
- Lila.* Was there euer fo bafe a fellow?
- Aym.* A rafcall?
- Lila.* A moft vnciuill Groome?
- Aym.* Offer to kicke a Gentleman, in a Nobleman's chamber? A pox of your manners. 145
- Lila.* Let him alone, let him alone, thou fhalt lofe thy arme, fellow: if we ftirre againft thee, hang vs.
- Page.* S'foote, I thinke they haue the better on him, though they be kickd, they talke fo.
- Lila.* Let's leaue the mad Ape. 150
- Nou.* Gentlemen.
- Lilad.* Nay, my Lord, we will not offer to difhonour you fo much as to ftay by you, fince hee's alone.
- Nou.* Harke you.
- Aym.* We doubt the caufe, and will not difparage you, fo much as to take your Lordfhips quarrel in hand. Plague on him, how he has crumpled our bands. 155
- Page.* Ile eene away with 'em, for this fouldier beates man, woman, and child. *Exeunt. Manent Nou. Rom.*
- Nou.* What meane you, fir? My people.
- Rom.* Your boye's gone, *Lockes the doore.* 160
- And doore's lockt, yet for no hurt to you,

137 *d'ee—d'ye* (C., f.138 *D'ee—D'ye* (C., M.—*Do you* (G., S.139 In Q., *For* is last word of line 138.139 *ya're—you're* (G., S.145 *of—o'* (C., f.147 *arme—aim* (M., f.150, end —G. & S. insert s. d.: *Going*.158 *'em—them* (G., S.161 *And doore's—And your door's* (G., S.

But priuacy: call vp your blood againe, fir,  
 Be not affraid, I do befeach you, fir,  
 (And therefore come) without, more circumſtance  
 Tell me how farre the paſſages haue gone 165  
 'Twixt you and your faire Miſtreſſe *Beaumelle*,  
 Tell me the truth, and by my hope of Heauen  
 It neuer ſhall goe further.

*Nou.* Tell you why fir?

Are you my confeſſor?

*Rom.* I will be your confounder, if you doe not. *Drawes a* 170  
 Stirre not, nor ſpend your voyce. *pocket dag.*

*Nou.* What will you doe?

*Rom.* Nothing but lye your brayne-pan, fir, with lead,  
 If you not fatiſie me ſuddenly,  
 I am deſperate of my life, and command yours.

*Nou.* Hold, hold, ile ſpeake. I vow to heauen and you, 175  
 Shee's yet vntouch't, more then her face and hands:  
 I cannot call her innocent; for I yeeld  
 On my ſollicitous wrongs ſhe contented  
 Where time and place met oportunity  
 To grant me all requeſts.

*Rom.* But may I build 180  
 On this affurance?

*Nou.* As vpon your fayth.

*Rom.* Write this, fir, nay you muſt. *Drawes Inkehorne*

*Nou.* Pox of this Gunne. *and paper.*

*Rom.* Withall, fir, you muſt ſweare, and put your oath  
 Vnder your hand, (ſhake not) ne're to frequent  
 This Ladies company, nor euer fend 185  
 Token, or meſſage, or letter, to incline  
 This (too much prone already) yeelding Lady.

*Nou.* 'Tis done, fir.

162-164 —printed as two lines in Q.: *But . . . do | Befeach . . . circum-  
 ſtance.*

163 —this line is omitted in M.

168 *Tell you why fir—Tell you? why ſir?* (C., M.—*Tell you! why,  
 ſir, G., S.*

171, s. d. *dag.—dagger* (C., M.)

174 *I am—I'm* (C., M.)

178 *wrongs—wooing* (M., f. Perhaps the Ms. reading was *wooings*.)

180 and 181 *But . . . affurance?*—printed as one line in Q.

*Rom.* Let me see, this first is right,  
 And heere you with a sudder death may light  
 Vpon your body, and hell take your foule, 190  
 If euer more you see her, but by chance,  
 Much lesse allure. Now, my Lord, your hand.

*Nou.* My hand to this?

*Rom.* Your heart else I assure you.

*Nou.* Nay, there 'tis.

*Rom.* So keepe this last article  
 Of your fayth giuen, and stead of threatnings, fir, 195  
 The seruice of my sword and life is yours:  
 But not a word of it, 'tis Fairies treasure;  
 Which but reueal'd, brings on the blabbers, ruine.  
 Vie your youth better, and this excellent forme  
 Heauen hath bestowed vpon you. So good morrow to your Lordship. 200

*Nou.* Good diuell to your roguiship. No man's safe:  
 Ile haue a Cannon planted in my chamber, *Exit.*  
 Against such roaring rogues.

*Enter Bellapert.*

*Bell.* My Lord away  
 The Coach stays: now haue your wife, and iudge,  
 If I haue been forgetfull.

*Nou.* Ha?

*Bell.* D'ee stand 205  
 Humming and hawing now? *Exit.*

*Nou.* Sweet wench, I come.  
 Hence feare,  
 I swore, that's all one, my next oath 'ile keepe  
 That I did meane to breake, and then 'tis quit.

188, after *see* , —omitted by G. & S.

189, end G. & S. insert s. d.: *Reading.*

194, after *So* —, (C., M.—! (G., S.

198 *blabbers, ruine*—*blabber's ruin* (M., f. The emendation is plausible, but not absolutely required.

202, s. d. *Exit*—C., f. place at end of line 200, its obviously correct position, as would undoubtedly Q., but for insufficient margin in the page at this point.

203 G. & S. give s. d.: *Enter Bellapert, hastily.*

204 *Coach*—*carock* (G., S.

205 *D'ee*—*D'ye* (C., M.—*Do you* (G., S.

No paine is due to louers periury.

210

If loue himfelfe laugh at it, fo will I.

*Exit Nouall.*

*Scaena 2. Enter Charaloy, Baumont.*

[*An outer Room in Aymer's House*]

*Bau.* I grieue for the diftaste, though I haue manners,  
Not to inquire the caufe, falne out betweene  
Your Lordfhip and *Romont*.

*Cha.* I loue a friend,  
So long as he continues in the bounds  
Prefcrib'd by friendfhip, but when he vsurpes  
Too farre on what is proper to my felfe,  
And puts the habit of a Gouvernor on,  
I muft and will preferue my liberty.

5

But fpeake of fomething, elfe this is a theame  
I take no pleafure in: what's this *Aymeire*,  
Whofe voyce for Song, and excellent knowledge in  
The chiefest parts of Mufique, you beftow  
Such prayfes on?

10

*Bau.* He is a Gentleman,  
(For fo his quality fpeakes him) well receiu'd  
Among our greateft Gallants; but yet holds  
His maine dependance from the young Lord *Nouall*:  
Some tricks and crotchets he has in his head,  
As all Muficians haue, and more of him  
I dare not author: but when you haue heard him,  
I may perfume, your Lordfhip fo will like him,  
That you'l hereafter be a friend to Mufique.

15

20

*Cha.* I neuer was an enemy to't, *Baumont*,  
Nor yet doe I fubfcribe to the opinion  
Of thofe old Captaines, that thought nothing muficall,  
But cries of yeelding enemies, neighing of horfes,  
Clafhing of armour, lowd fhouts, drums, and trumpets:

25

211 *loue*—*Jove* (C., f.

6 *on*—omitted by C., M.

9 , following *something* transferred to follow *elfe* by C., f.

Nor on the other fide in fauour of it,  
 Affirme the world was made by muficall difcord,  
 Or that the happineffe of our life confifts  
 In a well varied note vpon the Lute: 30  
 I loue it to the worth of it, and no further.  
 But let vs fee this wonder.

*Bau.* He preuents  
 My calling of him.

*Aym.* Let the Coach be brought *Enter Aymiere.*  
 To the backe gate, and ferue the banquet vp:  
 My good Lord *Charalois*, I thinke my houfe 35  
 Much honor'd in your prefence.

*Cha.* To haue meanes  
 To know you better, fir, has brought me hither  
 A willing vifitant, and you'l crowne my welcome  
 In making me a witneffe to your skill,  
 Which crediting from others I admire. 40

*Aym.* Had I beene one houre fooner made acquainted  
 With your intent my Lord, you fhould haue found me  
 Better provided: now fuch as it is,  
 Pray you grace with your acceptance.

*Bau.* You are modeft.  
 Begin the laft new ayre.

*Cha.* Shall we not fee them? 45

*Aym.* This little diftance from the intruments  
 Will to your eares conuey the harmony  
 With more delight.

*Cha.* Ile not content.

*Aym.* Y'are tedious,  
 By this meanes fhall I with one banquet pleafe

31 *of it—oft* (G., S.)

32 and 33 *He . . . him.*—printed as one line in Q.

33, s. d. —G. & S. read: *Enter Aymer, speaking to one within.*

45, after *ayre.*—G. & S. insert s. d.: *To the Musicians within.*

48 *consent—content* (C., f.—a correct emendation.)

48 *Y'are—You are* (G., S.)

48, end —G. & S. insert s. d.: *To the Musicians.*

Before 49 —S. inserts s. d.: *Aside.*

Two companies, those within and these Guls heere.

50

*Song above.*

*Mufique and a Song, Beaumelle within—ha, ha, ha,*

*Cha.* How's this? It is my Ladies laugh! most certaine  
When I first pleas'd her, in this merry language,  
She gaue me thanks.

*Bau.* How like you this?

*Cha.* 'Tis rare,

Yet I may be deceiu'd, and should be sorry

55

Vpon vncertaine fuppositions, rashly

To write my selfe in the blacke list of those

I haue declaym'd against, and to *Romont.*

*Aym.* I would he were well of—perhaps your Lordship

Likes not these sad tunes, I haue a new Song

60

Set to a lighter note, may please you better;

Tis call'd The happy husband.

*Cha.* Pray sing it.

*Song below. At the end of the Song, Beaumelle within.*

*Beau.* Ha, ha, 'tis such a groome.

*Cha.* Doe I heare this,

And yet stand doubtfull? *Exit*

*Aym.* Stay him I am vndone, *Chara.*

And they discovered.

*Bau.* Whats the matter?

*Aym.* Ah!

65

That women, when they are well pleas'd, cannot hold,

But must laugh out. *Enter Nouall Iu. Charaloys,*

After 50, s. d.: *Song*—i. e. the *Cittizens Song of the Courtier*, on page 146. —introduced here in text by Cunningham and S.

52, end —C. & M. punctuate with —; G. & S. with . .

54, after *thanks* —G. & S. insert s. d.: *Aside*.

58, end —G. & S. insert s. d.: *Aside*.

62 *Pray sing*—*Pray you sing* (G.

s. d. after 62, *Song below*—*Song by Aymer* (G., S.; it is the *Courtiers Song of the Citizen*, page 146. —introduced here in text by Cunningham and S.

63 and 64 *Doe . . . doubtfull?*—printed as one line in Q.

66 *they are—they're* (C., f.

67, s. d. —*Enter Nouall Iu. Charaloys*,—*Enter Charalois, with his sword drawn, pursuing Nouall junior*, etc. (G., S.

*Nou.* Helpe, faue me, murrher, murther. *Beaumley,*  
*Beau.* Vndone foreuer. *Bellapert.*

*Cha.* Oh, my heart!

Hold yet a little—doe not hope to scape  
 By flight, it is impossible: though I might 70  
 On all aduantage take thy life, and iustly;  
 This sword, my fathers sword, that nere was drawne,  
 But to a noble purpose, shall not now  
 Doe th' office of a hangman, I referue it  
 To right mine honour, not for a reuenge 75  
 So poore, that though with thee, it should cut off  
 Thy family, with all that are allyed  
 To thee in lust, or baseneffe, 'twere still short of  
 All termes of satisfaction. Draw.

*Nou.* I dare not,  
 I haue already done you too much wrong, 80  
 To fight in such a cause.

*Cha.* Why, dar'est thou neyther  
 Be honest, coward, nor yet valiant, knaue?  
 In such a cause come doe not shame thy selfe:  
 Such whose bloods wrongs, or wrong done to themfelues  
 Could neuer heate, are yet in the defence 85  
 Of their whores, daring looke on her againe.  
 You thought her worth the hazard of your soule,  
 And yet stand doubtfull in her quarrell, to  
 Venture your body.

*Bau.* No, he feares his cloaths,  
 More then his flesh

*Cha.* Keepe from me, garde thy life, 90  
 Or as thou hast liu'd like a goate, thou shalt  
 Dye like a sheepe.

*Nou.* Since ther's no remedy *They fight, Nouall*  
 Despaire of safety now in me proue courage. *is flaine.*

*Cha.* How soone weak wrong's or'throwne! lend me your hand,

68 *Vndone foreuer—Undone, undone, forever!* (G.—C. & M. give this  
 speech to *Bellapert.*

74 *th'—the* (G., S.)

82 M., f. omit 's after *honest* and *valiant.*

86 *daring looke—daring.* *Look* (C., f.)

89 and 90 *No . . . flesh*—printed as one line in Q.

93 *of*—its *f* is almost invisible in Q.



Beare this to the Caroach—come, you haue taught me 95  
 To fay you must and shall: I wrong you not,  
 Y'are but to keepe him company you loue.  
 Is't done? 'tis well. Raife officers, and take care,  
 All you can apprehend within the house  
 May be forth comming. Do I appeare much mou'd? 100  
*Bau.* No, fir.  
*Cha.* My griefes are now, Thus to be borne.  
 Hereafter ile finde time and place to mourne.

*Exeunt.*

*Scaena 3. Enter Romont, Pontalier.*

[*A Street*]

*Pont.* I was bound to feeke you, fir.  
*Rom.* And had you found me  
 In any place, but in the streete, I should  
 Haue done,—not talk'd to you. Are you the Captaine?  
 The hopefull *Pontalier*? whom I haue feene  
 Doe in the field fuch seruice, as then made you 5  
 Their enuy that commanded, here at home  
 To play the parasite to a gilded knaue,  
 And it may be the Pander.  
*Pont.* Without this  
 I come to call you to account, for what  
 Is past already. I by your example 10  
 Of thankfulnessse to the dead Generall  
 By whom you were rais'd, haue practis'd to be fo  
 To my good Lord *Nouall*, by whom I liue;  
 Whose least disgrace that is, or may be offred,  
 With all the hazzard of my life and fortunes, 15  
 I will make good on you, or any man,

95 *haue*—its *e* is almost invisible in Q.

96 : —? (G.)

96, after *shall* G. & S. insert s. d.: *Exeunt Beaumont and Bellapert, with the body of Nouall; followed by Beaumelle.*

97 *Y'are—you are* (G., S.)

97, end G. & S. insert s. d.: *Re-enter Beaumont.*

3 *not—nor* (C.)

8 . —? (C., f.)

That has a hand in't; and since you allowe me  
 A Gentleman and a fouldier, there's no doubt  
 You will except against me. You shall meete  
 With a faire enemy, you vnderstand  
 The right I looke for, and must haue.

20

*Rom.* I doe,  
 And with the next dayes funne you shall heare from me.

*Exeunt.*

*Scaena 4. Enter Charalois with a casket, Beaumelle, Baumont.*

[*A Room in Charalois' House*]

*Cha.* Pray beare this to my father, at his leafure  
 He may peruse it: but with your best language  
 Intreat his infant prefence: you haue sworn  
 Not to reueale what I haue done.

*Bau.* Nor will I—  
 But—

*Cha.* Doubt me not, by Heauen, I will doe nothing  
 But what may stand with honour: Pray you leaue me  
 To my owne thoughts. If this be to me, rife;  
 I am not worthy the looking on, but onely  
 To feed contempt and scorn, and that from you  
 Who with the losse of your faire name haue caus'd it,  
 Were too much cruelty.

5

10

*Beau.* I dare not moue you  
 To heare me speake. I know my fault is farre  
 Beyond qualification, or excuse,  
 That 'tis not fit for me to hope, or you  
 To thinke of mercy; onely I perfume  
 To intreate, you would be pleas'd to looke vpon  
 My sorrow for it, and beleue, these teares  
 Are the true children of my griefe and not  
 A womans cunning.

15

*Cha.* Can you *Beaumelle*,

4 and 5 *Nor . . . but—* —printed as one line in Q.

6, end —C., f. insert s. d.: *Exit* Baumont.

7, end —C., f. insert s. d.: *Beaumelle kneels.*

8 *worthy—worth* (G., S.)

Hauing deceiued so great a trust as mine, 20  
 Though I were all credulity, hope againe  
 To get beleefe? no, no, if you looke on me  
 With pity or dare practife any meanes  
 To make my sufferings lesse, or giue iust cause  
 To all the world, to thinke what I must doe 25  
 Was cal'd vpon by you, vse other waies,  
 Deny what I haue seene, or iustifie  
 What you haue done, and as you desperately  
 Made shipwracke of your fayth to be a whore,  
 Vse th' armes of such a one, and such defence, 30  
 And multiply the sinne, with impudence,  
 Stand boldly vp, and tell me to my teeth,  
 You haue done but what's warranted,  
 By great examples, in all places, where  
 Women inhabit, vrge your owne deferts, 35  
 Or want of me in merit; tell me how,  
 Your dowre from the lowe gulfe of pouerty,  
 Weighed vp my fortunes, to what now they are:  
 That I was purchas'd by your choyse and practife  
 To fhelter you from shame: that you might sinne 40  
 As boldly as securely, that poore men  
 Are married to those wiues that bring them wealth,  
 One day their husbands, but obseruers euer:  
 That when by this prou'd vjage you haue blowne  
 The fire of my iust vengeance to the height, 45  
 I then may kill you: and yet say 'twas done  
 In heate of blood, and after die my selfe,  
 To witnesse my repentance.

*Beau.*

O my fate,

That neuer would consent that I should see,  
 How worthy thou wert both of loue and duty 50  
 Before I lost you; and my misery made

30 *th'—the* (G., S.)

33 variously emended for defective metre: *That you haue done but what's warranted*, (C., M.); *That you haue done but what is warranted*, (G.); *You haue done merely but what's warranted*, (S.)

36 *of me in—in me of* (C., M., S.) The emendation is unnecessary.

38 *now they—they now* (G.)

50 *thou wert—you were* (G., S.)

The glasse, in which I now behold your vertue :  
 While I was good, I was a part of you,  
 And of two, by the vertuous harmony  
 Of our faire minds, made one ; but since I wandred 55  
 In the forbidden Labyrinth of lust,  
 What was inefeparable, is by me diuided.  
 With iustice therefore you may cut me off,  
 And from your memory, wash the remembrance  
 That ere I was like to some vicious purpose 60  
 Within your better iudgement, you repent of  
 And studdy to forget.

*Cha.* *O Beaumelle,*

That you can speake so well, and doe so ill !  
 But you had been too great a blessing, if  
 You had continued chaft : see how you force me 65  
 To this, because my honour will not yeeld  
 That I againe should loue you.

*Beau.* *In this life*

It is not fit you shou d : yet you shall finde,  
 Though I was bold enough to be a trumpet,  
 I dare not yet liue one : let those fam'd matrones 70  
 That are canoniz'd worthy of our sex,  
 Transcend me in their fancity of life,  
 I yet will equall them in dying nobly,  
 Ambitious of no honour after life,  
 But that when I am dead, you will forgiue me. 75

*Cha.* How pity steales vpon me ! should I heare her

But ten words more, I were lost—one knocks, go in.	<i>Knock</i>	
That to be mercifull should be a sinne.	<i>within.</i>	
O, sir, most welcome. Let me take your cloake,	<i>Exit Beau-</i>	
I must not be denied—here are your robes,	<i>melle.</i>	80
As you loue iustice once more put them on :	<i>Enter</i>	
There is a cause to be determin'd of	<i>Rochfort.</i>	
That doe's require such an integrity,		
As you haue euer vs'd—ile put you to		

60, after *was* —; (C., f.)

61 *Within—Which in* (M., f.)

77, *post* —The three s. d.'s are made by C., f. to follow respectively lines 76, 77, and 78.

The tryall of your constancy, and goodnesse: 85  
 And looke that you that haue bene Eagle-eyd  
 In other mens affaires, proue not a Mole  
 In what concernes your selfe. Take you your feate:  
 I will be for you presently. *Exit.*

*Roch.* Angels guard me,  
 To what strange Tragedy does this destruction 90  
 Serue for a Prologue? *Enter Charaloyes with Nouals*

*Cha.* So, set it downe before *body. Beaumelle, Bau-*  
 The Iudgement feate, and stand you at the bar: *mont.*  
 For me? I am the accuser.

*Roch.* *Nouall* flayne,  
 And *Beaumelle* my daughter in the place  
 Of one to be arraign'd.

*Cha.* O, are you touch'd? 95  
 I finde that I must take another course,  
 Feare nothing. I will onely blind your eyes,  
 For Iustice should do so, when 'tis to meete  
 An obiect that may sway her equall doome  
 From what it should be aim'd at.—Good my Lord, 100  
 A day of hearing.

*Roch.* It is granted, speake—  
 You shall haue iustice.

*Cha.* I then here accuse,  
 Most equall Iudge, the prisoner your faire Daughter,  
 For whom I owed so much to you: your daughter,  
 So worthy in her owne parts: and that worth 105  
 Set forth by yours, to whose so rare perfections,  
 Truth witnesse with me, in the place of seruice  
 I almost pay'd Idolatrous sacrifice

89 *be for*—before (C., M.)

90 *destruction*—*induction* (G., S., following the suggestion of M.)

91, s. d. —G. & S. omit phrase *with Nouals body.* and affix to s. d. *with Servants bearing the Body of Nouall junior.*

92, after *feate,* —G. & S. insert s. d.: *Exeunt Servants.*

93 *me*—the *e* is obliterated in Q.

93 ? —, (C., f.)

96, end —C. & M. insert s. d.: *He hoodwinks Rochfort.* G. & S. place a similar s. d. at the end of the following line.

101 and 102 *It . . . iustice*—printed as one line in Q.

To be a false adu'tresse.

*Roch.* With whom?

*Cha.* With this *Nouall* here dead.

*Roch.* Be wel aduis'd 110

And ere you fay adu'tresse againe,  
Her fame depending on it, be most sure  
That she is one.

*Cha.* I tooke them in the act.

I know no prooffe beyond it.

*Roch.* O my heart.

*Cha.* A Iudge should feele no passions.

*Roch.* Yet remember 115

He is a man, and cannot put off nature.

What answere makes the prisoner?

*Beau.* I confesse

The fact I am charg'd with, and yeeld my selfe  
Most miserably guilty.

*Roch.* Heauen take mercy

Vpon your foule then: it must leaue your body. 120

Now free mine eyes, I dare vn mou'd looke on her,

And fortifie my sentence, with strong reasons.

Since that the politique law prouides that seruants,

To whose care we commit our goods shall die,

If they abuse our trust: what can you looke for, 125

To whose charge this most hopefull Lord gaue vp

All he receiu'd from his braue Ancestors,

Or he could leaue to his posterity?

His Honour, wicked woman, in whose safety

All his lifes ioyes, and comforts were locked vp, 130

With thy lust, a theefe hath now stolne from him,

And therefore—

*Cha.* Stay, iust Iudge, may not what's loft

By her owne fault, (for I am charitable,

And charge her not with many) be forgotten

In her faire life hereafter?

121, end —G. & S. insert s. d.: Charalois *unbinds his eyes*.

131 *With—Which* (M., f.

131, after *thy* —G. says a monosyllable has been lost here. S. inserts *foul*. But an acceptable rhythm is secured by the natural stress of the voice, which emphasizes and dwells upon *thy*, and again stresses *kept*.

133 *owne—one* (M., f.

*Roch.* Neuer, Sir. 135

The wrong that's done to the chafte married bed,  
Repentant teares can neuer expiate,  
And be affured, to pardon fuch a finne,  
Is an offence as great as to commit it.

*Cha.* I may not then forgiue her.

*Roch.* Nor fhe hope it. 140

Nor can fhe wifh to liue no funne fhall rife,  
But ere it fet, fhall fhew her vgly luft  
In a new fhape, and euery on more horrid:  
Nay, euen thofe prayers, which with fuch humble feruor  
She feemes to fend vp yonder, are beate backe, 145  
And all fuites, which her penitance can proffer,  
As foone as made, are with contempt throwne  
Off all the courts of mercy. *He kills her.*

*Cha.* Let her die then.

Better prepar'd I am. Sure I could not take her,  
Nor fhe accufe her father, as a Iudge 150  
Partiall againft her.

*Beau.* I approue his fentence,  
And kiffe the executioner; my luft  
Is now run from me in that blood; in which  
It was begot and nourifhed.

*Roch.* Is fhe dead then?

*Cha.* Yes, fir, this is her heart blood, is it not? 155  
I thinke it be.

*Roch.* And you haue kild here?

*Cha.* True,

And did it by your doome

140, after *her*. —? (C., f.)

141 *liue no—liue*. No (C., M.—*liue: no* (G., S.)

143 *on—one* (C., f.)

147, end —G. & S. insert *out*, changing first word of l. 148 to *Of*.  
C. & M. make *Off* of l. 148 conclude 147, and insert *From* to begin l. 148.  
It is preferable to let the line stand as it is, letting the voice, in reading,  
dwell and pause upon *are*.

148 s. d., *He kills her*. transferred to end of line by C., f.

149 *I am*. *Sure—I am sure* (M.—*I'm sure* (G., S.)

154, after *nourifhed*. —C., f. inserts s. d.: *Dies*.

156 and 157 *True . . . doome*—printed as one line in Q.

*Roch.* But I pronounc'd it  
 As a Iudge onely, and friend to iustice,  
 And zealous in defence of your wrong'd honour,  
 Broke all the tyes of nature: and cast off 160  
 The loue and soft affection of a father.  
 I in your cause, put on a Scarlet robe  
 Of red died cruelty, but in returne,  
 You haue aduanc'd for me no flag of mercy:  
 I look'd on you, as a wrong'd husband, but 165  
 You clos'd your eyes against me, as a father.  
 O *Beaumelle*, my daughter.

*Cha.* This is madneffe.

*Roch.* Keepe from me—could not one good thought rife vp,  
 To tell you that she was my ages comfort,  
 Begot by a weake man, and borne a woman, 170  
 And could not therefore, but partake of frailety?  
 Or wherefore did not thankfulnesse step forth,  
 To vrge my many merits, which I may  
 Obiect vnto you, since you proue vngratefull,  
 Flinty-hearted *Charaloy*s?

*Cha.* Nature does preuaile 175  
 About your vertue.

*Roch.* No! it giues me eyes,  
 To pierce the heart of designe against me.  
 I finde it now, it was my fate was aym'd at,  
 A nobler match was fought for, and the houres  
 I liu'd, grew teadious to you: my compaffion 180  
 Towards you hath rendred me most miserable,  
 And foolish charity vndone my selfe:  
 But ther's a Heauen aboue, from whose iust wreake  
 No mits of policy can hide offenders. *Enter Nouall* *fe.*

*Nou. fe.* Force ope the doors—O monfter, caniball, with 185  
 Lay hold on him, my sonne, my sonne.—O *Rochfort*, *Officers.*

158 and friend—and a friend (C., f.)

175 *Flinty*- — *Flint*- (G., S.)

175 and 176 *Nature . . . vertue.*—printed as one line in Q.

177, after *of* —C., f. insert *your*. But the change is not required by the sense; nor by the metre, if the voice be allowed to dwell on *heart*.

184 s. d.: *Enter Nouall*, etc.—G. & S. place after *doors* in next line.

185, before *Force* —G. & S. insert s. d.: *Within*.



'Twas you gaue liberty to this bloody wolfe  
 To worry all our comforts,—But this is  
 No time to quarrell; now giue your affittance  
 For the reuenge.

*Roch.* Call it a fitter name— 190  
 Iustice for innocent blood.

*Cha.* Though all conspire  
 Against that life which I am weary of,  
 A little longer yet ile striue to keepe it,  
 To shew in spite of malice, and their lawes,  
 His plea muft speed that hath an honest cause. *Exeunt* 195

190 and 191 *Call . . . blood.*—printed as one line in Q.

*Actus quintus. Scaena prima.*

[*A Street*]

*Enter Liladam, Taylor, Officers.*

*Lila*

WHY 'tis both most vnconfcionable, and vntimely  
T'arrest a gallant for his cloaths, before  
He has worne them out: besides you sayd you ask'd  
My name in my Lords bond but for me onely,  
And now you'l lay me vp for't. Do not thinke 5  
The taking measure of a customer  
By a brace of varlets, though I rather wait  
Neuer so patiently, will proue a fashion  
Which any Courtier or Innes of court man  
Would follow willingly.

*Tayl.* There I beleeeue you. 10  
But fir, I must haue present moneys, or  
Affurance to secure me, when I shall.—  
Or I will see to your comming forth.

*Lila.* Plague on't,  
You haue prouided for my enturance in:  
That comming forth you talke of, concernes me. 15  
What shall I doe? you haue done me a disgrace  
In the arrest, but more in giuing cause  
To all the street, to thinke I cannot stand  
Without these two supporters for my armes:  
Pray you let them loofe me: for their satisfaction 20  
I will not run away.

*Tayl.* For theirs you will not,

*Enter, etc. Officers—two Bailiffs.* (G., S.)

2 *T'arrest—To arrest* (G., S.)

4 *for me—for form* (M., f.)

16 *you haue—you've* (C., M.)

But for your owne you would; looke to them fellows.

*Lila.* Why doe you call them fellows? doe not wrong

Your reputation fo, as you are meerely

A Taylor, faythfull, apt to beleeeue in Gallants

25

You are a companion at a ten crowne supper

For cloth of bodkin, and may with one Larke

Eate vp three manchets, and no man obserue you,

Or call your trade in queſtion for't. But when

You ſtudy your debt-booke, and hold correſpondence

30

With officers of the hanger, and leaue fwordmen,

The learned conclude, the Taylor and Sergeant

In the expreſſion of a knaue are theſe

To be *Synonima*. Looke therefore to it,

And let vs part in peace, I would be loth

35

You ſhould vndoe your ſelfe.

*Tayl.*

To let you goe *Enter old Nouall,  
and Pontalier.*

Were the next way.

But fee! heeres your old Lord,

Let him but giue his worde I ſhall be paide,

And you are free.

*Lila.*

S'lid, I will put him to't:

I can be but denied: or what fay you?

40

His Lordſhip owing me three times your debt,

If you arreſt him at my fuite, and let me

Goe run before to fee the action entred.

'Twould be a witty left.

*Tayl.*

I muſt haue ernest:

I cannot pay my debts fo.

*Pont.*

Can your Lordſhip

45

Imagine, while I liue and weare a fword,

Your fonnes death ſhall be reueng'd?

22 *them—him* (C., f. The Q. reading is preferable in every way.

24 *fo*—M. omits.

26 *You are—You're* (C., M.

32, after *and* —G. & S. insert *the*.

33 *are theſe—or thief* (M.—*and thief* (G., S., which ſeems ſlightly the more probable correction.

34 *Synonima—synonymous* (C., M.

36, end s. d. —C., f. place s. d. after *ſelfe*.

39 *I will—I'll* (C., m.

47 *reueng'd—un-revenged* (C., f.,—an obviously correct emendation.

*Nou. fe.* I know not  
 One reason why you should not doe like others:  
 I am sure, of all the herd that fed vpon him,  
 I cannot see in any, now hee's gone, 50  
 In pittie or in thankfulness one true signe  
 Of sorrow for him.

*Pont.* All his bounties yet  
 Fell not in such vnthankfull ground: 'tis true  
 He had weakenesses, but such as few are free from,  
 And though none foth'd them lesse then I: for now 55  
 To say that I foresaw the dangers that  
 Would rise from cherishing them, were but vntimely.  
 I yet could with the iustice that you seeke for  
 In the reuenge, had been trusted to me,  
 And not the vncertaine issue of the lawes: 60  
 'Tas rob'd me of a noble testimony  
 Of what I durst doe for him: but howeuer,  
 My forfait life redeem'd by him though dead,  
 Shall doe him seruice.

*Nou. fe.* As farre as my grieue  
 Will giue me leaue, I thanke you. 65

*Lila.* Oh my Lord,  
 Oh my good Lord, deliuer me from these furies.

*Pont.* Arrested? This is one of them whose base  
 And obiect flattery helpt to digge his graue:  
 He is not worth your pittie, nor my anger.  
 Goe to the basket and repent.

*Nou. fe.* Away 70  
 I onely know now to hate thee deadly:  
 I will doe nothing for thee.

*Lila.* Nor you, Captaine.

*Pont.* No, to your trade againe, put off this case,  
 It may be the discouering what you were,  
 When your vnfortunate maister tooke you vp, 75  
 May moue compassion in your creditor.

57, end . —, (C., f.

61 'Tas—It has (M., f.

68 obiect—object (C., f.

70 and 71 Away . . . deadly:—printed as one line in Q.

71, after know—G. & S. insert *thee*, which secures a smoother metre, but is not warranted.

Confesse the truth.

*Exit Nouall je. Pont.*

*Lila.*

And now I thinke on't better,

I will, brother, your hand, your hand, sweet brother.

I am of your sect, and my gallantry but a dreame,

Out of which these two fearefull apparitions

80

Against my will haue wak'd me. This rich sword

Grew suddenly out of a taylors bodkin;

These hangers from my vailes and fees in Hell:

And where as now this beauer fits, full often

A thrifty cape compos'd of broad cloth lifts,

85

Nere kin vnto the cushion where I fate.

Crosse-leg'd, and yet vngartred, hath beene seene,

Our breakfasts famous for the buttred loaves,

I haue with ioy bin oft acquainted with,

And therefore vse a conscience, though it be

90

Forbidden in our hall towards other men,

To me that as I haue beene, will againe

Be of the brotherhood.

*Offi.*

I know him now:

He was a prentice to *Le Robe* at *Orleance*.

*Lila.* And from thence brought by my young Lord, now dead, 95

Vnto *Dijon*, and with him till this houre

Hath bin receiu'd here for a compleate Mounfieur.

Nor wonder at it: for but tythe our gallants,

Euen those of the first ranke, and you will finde

In euery ten, one: peraduenture two,

100

That smell ranke of the dancing schoole, or fiddle,

The pantofle or preffing yron: but hereafter

Weele talke of this. I will furrender vp

My suites againe: there cannot be much losse,

'Tis but the turning of the lace, with ones

105

Additions more you know of, and what wants

79 *I am—I'm* (C., f.)

84 *fits*—M. reads *fits*, the first letter in Q. not being certainly distinguishable as *f* or *f*.

85 *cape—cap* (C., f.)

86 *fate.—sat*, (C., f.)

93 *Offi.*—1 Bail. (G., S.)

97 *Hath—Have* (M., G.)

105 *ones—one* (C., f.)

106 *Additions—Addition* (C., f.)

I will worke out.

*Tayl.* Then here our quarrell ends.  
The gallant is turn'd Taylor, and all friends. *Exeunt.*

*Scaena 2. Enter Romont, Baumont.*

[*The Court of Justice*]

*Rom.* You haue them ready.

*Bau.* Yes, and they will speake  
Their knowledg in this caufe, when thou thinkst fit  
To haue them cal'd vpon.

*Rom.* 'Tis well, and fomething  
I can adde to their euidence, to proue  
This braue reuenge, which they would haue cal'd murder, 5  
A noble Iuftice.

*Bau.* In this you expresse  
(The breach by my Lords want of you, new made vp)  
A faythfull friend.

*Rom.* That friendship's rays'd on fand,  
Which euery fudden guft of difcontent,  
Or flowing of our paffions can change, 10  
As if it nere had bin: but doe you know  
Who are to fit on him?

*Bau.* Mounfieur *Du Croy*  
Affifted by *Charmi*.

*Rom.* The Aduocate  
That pleaded for the Marfhalls funerall,  
And was checkt for it by *Nouall*.

*Bau.* The fame 15

*Rom.* How fortunes that?

*Bau.* Why, fir, my Lord *Nouall*  
Being the accufer, cannot be the Iudge,  
Nor would grieue *Rochfort*, but Lord *Charaloy*s

2 *thou thinkst—you think* (G., S.)

7 *new—now* (M.)

15, after *Nouall* . —? (G., S.)

18 *griue—grieved* (M., f., a correct emendation.)

(Howeuer he might wrong him by his power,)  
Should haue an equall hearing.

*Rom.* By my hopes 20  
Of *Charaloys* acquittall, I lament  
That reuerent old mans fortune.

*Bau.* Had you feene him,  
As to my grieffe I haue now promis'd patience,  
And ere it was beleeu'd, though spake by him  
That neuer brake his word, inrag'd againe 25  
So far as to make warre vpon thofe heires  
Which not a barbarous Sythian durst presume  
To touch, but with a superstitious feare,  
As something sacred, and then curse his daughter,  
But with more frequent violence himfelfe, 30  
As if he had bin guilty of her fault,  
By being incredulous of your report,  
You would not onely iudge him worrhy pitty,  
But fuffer with him.

*Enter Charalois, with Officers.*  
But heere comes the prifoner, 35  
I dare not stay to doe my duty to him,  
Yet rest assur'd, all possible meanes in me  
To doe him seruice, keeps you company. *Exit Bau.*

*Rom.* It is not doubted.

*Cha.* Why, yet as I came hither,  
The people apt to mocke calamity,  
And tread on the oppres'd, made no hornes at me, 40  
Though they are too familiar: I deferue them.  
And knowing what blood my sword hath drunke  
In wreake of that disgrace, they yet forbare  
To shake their heads, or to reuile me for  
A murtherer, they rather all put on 45  
(As for great losses the old *Romans* vs'd)  
A generall face of forrow, waighted on

23, after *haue* —C., f. insert , .

23 *promis'd*—*promise* (C., f.

26 *heires*—i. e., of course, *hairs*;—so modernized by C., f.

33 *worrhy*—Q. misprint for *worthy*;—corrected by C., f.

39, after *people*—C., f. insert , .

42, after *knowing* —M., f. insert *too*.

By a fad murmur breaking through their filence,  
 And no eye but was readier with a teare  
 To witnesse 'twas fhed for me, then I could 50  
 Diferne a face made vp with fcorne againft me.  
 Why fhould I then, though for vnufuall wrongs,  
 I choſe vnufuall meanes to right thoſe wrongs,  
 Condemne my ſelfe, as ouer-partiall  
 In my owne cauſe Romont?

*Rom.* Beſt friend, well met, 55  
 By my hearts loue to you, and ioyne to that,  
 My thankfullneſſe that ſtill liues to the dead,  
 I looke vpon you now with more true ioy,  
 Then when I ſaw you married.

*Cha.* You haue reaſon 60  
 To giue you warrant for't; my falling off  
 From ſuch a friendſhip with the ſcorne that answered  
 Your too propheticke counſell, may well moue you  
 To thinke your meeting me going to my death,  
 A fit encounter for that hate which iuſtly  
 I haue deſeru'd from you.

*Rom.* Shall I ſtill then 65  
 Speake truth, and be ill vnderſtood?

*Cha.* You are not.  
 I am conſcious, I haue wrong'd you, and allow me  
 Only a morall man to looke on you,  
 Whom fooliſhly I haue abus'd and iniur'd, 70  
 Muſt of neceſſity be more terrible to me,  
 Then any death the Iudges can pronounce  
 From the tribunall which I am to plead at.

*Rom.* Paſſion tranſports you.

*Cha.* For what I haue done 75  
 To my falſe Lady, or *Nouall*, I can  
 Giue ſome apparent cauſe: but touching you,  
 In my defence, childlike, I can ſay nothing,

55, after *cauſe* —(C, M. —?(G, S, which is right.

67 *I am—I'm* (C, M.

68, after *man*—M. inserts , , and G. & S. ;—.

76, end G. & S. omit , .



But I am sorry for't, a poore satisfaction:  
 And yet mistake me not: for it is more  
 Then I will speake, to haue my pardon fig'n'd  
 For all I stand accus'd of.

*Rom.* You much weaken 80  
 The strength of your good cause. Should you but thinke  
 A man for doing well could entertaine  
 A pardon, were it offered, you haue giuen  
 To blinde and flow-pac'd iustice, wings, and eyes  
 To see and ouertake impieties, 85  
 Which from a cold proceeding had receiu'd  
 Indulgence or protection.

*Cha.* Thinke you so?

*Rom.* Vpon my foule nor should the blood you challenge  
 And took to cure your honour, breed more scruple  
 In your soft conscience, then if your sword 90  
 Had bin sheath'd in a Tygre, or she Beare,  
 That in their bowels would haue made your tombe  
 To iniure innocence is more then murther:  
 But when inhumane lusts transforme vs, then  
 Like beasts we are to suffer, not like men 95  
 To be lamented. Nor did *Charalois* euer  
 Performe an act so worthy the applause  
 Of a full theater of perfect men,  
 As he hath done in this: the glory got  
 By ouerthrowing outward enemies, 100  
 Since strength and fortune are maine sharers in it,  
 We cannot but by pieces call our owne:  
 But when we conquer our intestine foes,  
 Our passions breed within vs, and of those  
 The most rebellious tyrant powerfull loue, 105  
 Our reason suffering vs to like no longer  
 Then the faire object being good deserues it,  
 That's a true victory, which, were great men  
 Ambitious to atchieue, by your example

77, after *But* —G. & S. insert , .

80 and 81 *You . . . cause.*—printed as one line in Q.

88 *challenge*—*challenged* (G., S.—a correct emendation.

91 *Tygre*—*tigress* (C., M.

104 *breed*—*bread* (C., f. The Q. reading is perfectly satisfactory.

Setting no price vpon the breach of fayth, 110  
 But losse of life, 'twould fright adultery  
 Out of their families, and make luft appeare  
 As lothsome to vs in the first consent,  
 As when 'tis wayted on by punishment.

*Cha.* You haue confirm'd me. Who would loue a woman 115  
 That might inioy in fuch a man, a friend?  
 You haue made me know the iuftice of my caufe,  
 And mark't me out the way, how to defend it.

*Rom.* Continue to that refolution conftant,  
 And you fhall, in contempt of their worft malice, 120  
 Come off with honour. Heere they come.

*Cha.* I am ready.

*Scaena 3. Enter Du Croy, Charmi, Rochfort, Nouall fe.  
 Pontalier, Baumont.*

*Nou. fe.* See, equall Iudges, with what confidence  
 The cruel murtherer ftands, as if he would  
 Outface the Court and Iuftice!

*Roch.* But looke on him.  
 And you fhall find, for ftill methinks I doe,  
 Though guilt hath dide him black, fomething good in him, 5  
 That may perhaps worke with a wifer man  
 Then I haue beene, againe to fet him free  
 And giue him all he has.

*Charmi.* This is not well.  
 I would you had liu'd fo, my Lord that I,  
 Might rather haue continu'd your poore feruant, 10  
 Then fit here as your Iudge.

*Du Croy* I am forry for you.

*Roch.* In no act of my life I haue defertu'd  
 This iniury from the court, that any heere  
 Should thus vnciuilly vfurpe on what  
 Is proper to me only.

117 *You haue—You've* (C., M.)

*Scaena 3*—omitted by G. & S.—and correctly so, for there is no change  
 in place from the preceding, and the action is uninterrupted.

*Du Cr.* What distaste  
Receives my Lord? 15

*Roch.* You say you are sorry for him:  
A griefe in which I must not haue a partner:  
'Tis I alone am sorry, that I rays'd  
The building of my life for seuenty yeeres  
Vpon so fure a ground, that all the vices 20  
Practis'd to ruine man, though brought against me,  
Could neuer vndermine, and no way left  
To fend these gray haire to the graue with sorrow.  
Vertue that was my patronesse betrayd me:  
For entring, nay, possessing this young man, 25  
It lent him such a powerfull Maiesty  
To grace what ere he vndertooke, that freely  
I gaue myselfe vp with my liberty,  
To be at his disposing; had his person  
Louely I must confesse, or far fain'd valour, 30  
Or any other seeming good, that yet  
Holds a neere neyghbour-hood, with ill wrought on me,  
I might haue borne it better: but when goodnesse  
And piety it selfe in her best figure  
Were brib'd to by destruction, can you blame me, 35  
Though I forget to suffer like a man,  
Or rather act a woman?

*Bau.* Good my Lord.

*Nou. fe.* You hinder our proceeding.

*Charmi.* And forget

The parts of an accuser.

*Bau.* Pray you remember  
To vse the temper which to me you promis'd. 40

*Roch.* Angels themselues must breake *Baumont*, that promise  
Beyond the strength and patience of Angels.  
But I haue done, my good Lord, pardon me  
A weake old man, and pray adde to that

18, after *that*—M., f. insert *when*. See Notes.

30 *fain'd*—*famed* (M., f.)

32 —, after *neyghbour-hood* in Q. is placed after *ill* by C., f.

35 *by—my* (C., f.)

44, after *pray*—G. & S. insert *you*.

A miserable father, yet be carefull 45  
 That your compaffion of my age, nor his,  
 Moue you to anything, that may dif-become  
 The place on which you fit.

*Charmi.* Read the Inditement.

*Cha.* It fhall be needeleffe, I my felfe, my Lords,  
 Will be my owne accufer, and confeffe 50  
 All they can charge me with, or will I spare  
 To aggravate that guilt with circumftance  
 They feeke to loade me with: onely I pray,  
 That as for them you will vouchfafe me hearing:  
 I may not be, denide it for my felfe, 55  
 When I fhall vrge by what vnanfwerable reafons  
 I was compel'd to what I did, which yet  
 Till you haue taught me better, I repent not.

*Roch.* The motion honeft.

*Charmi.* And 'tis freely granted.

*Cha.* Then I confeffe my Lords, that I ftood bound, 60  
 When with my friends, euen hope it felfe had left me  
 To this mans charity for my liberty,  
 Nor did his bounty end there, but began:  
 For after my enlargement, cherifhing  
 The good he did, he made me mafter of 65  
 His onely daughter, and his whole eftate:  
 Great ties of thankfulneffe I muft acknowledge,  
 Could any one freed by you, preffe this further  
 But yet confider, my moft honourd Lords,  
 If to receiue a fauour, make a feruant, 70  
 And benefits are bonds to tie the taker  
 To the imperious will of him that giues,  
 Ther's none but flaues will receiue courtesie,  
 Since they muft fetter vs to our difhonours.

47 *dis-become*—*mis-become* (C., M.)

50 —*u* in *accufer* is inverted in Q.

51 *or*—*nor* (C., f.)

59 *motion*—*motion's* (C., f.)

60 —*n* in *confeffe* is inverted in Q.

68 *freed*—*feed* (M., f.)

68, end —*?* (C., f.)

73 *courtesie*—*courtesies* (C., f. Q. reading is preferable. See Glossary.)

Can it be cal'd magnificence in a Prince,  
 To powre downe riches, with a liberall hand,  
 Vpon a poore mans wants, if that muft bind him  
 To play the foothing parasite to his vices?  
 Or any man, becaufe he fau'd my hand,  
 Prefume my head and heart are at his feruice? 80  
 Or did I ftand ingag'd to buy my freedome  
 (When my captiuity was honourable)  
 By making my felfe here and fame hereafter,  
 Bondflaues to mens icorne and calumnious tongues?  
 Had his faire daughters mind bin like her feature,  
 Or for fome little blemifh I had fought 85  
 For my content elfewhere, wafting on others  
 My body and her dowry; my forehead then  
 Deferu'd the brand of bafe ingratitude:  
 But if obfequious vface, and faire warning 90  
 To keepe her worth my loue, could preferue her  
 From being a whore, and yet no cunning one,  
 So to offend, and yet the fault kept from me?  
 What fhould I doe? let any freeborne fpirit  
 Determine truly, if that thankfulneffe, 95  
 Choife forme with the whole world giuen for a dowry,  
 Could ftrengthen fo an honeft man with patience,  
 As with a willing necke to vndergoe  
 The infupportable yoake of flaue or wittoll.  
*Charmi.* What prooffe haue you fhe did play falfe, besides 100  
 your oath?  
*Cha.* Her owne confeffion to her father.  
 I afke him for a witneffe.  
*Roch.* 'Tis moft true.  
 I would not willingly blend my laft words  
 With an vntruth.  
*Cha.* And then to cleere my felfe,  
 That his great wealth was not the marke I fhott at, 105  
 But that I held it, when faire *Beaumelle*

77 *that—they* (S.)88 *dowry—dower* (G., S.)91 *could preferue—could not preserve* (C., f. The emendation is clearly required.)

Fell from her vertue, like the fatall gold  
 Which *Brennus* tooke from *Delphos*, whose poffeffion  
 Brought with it ruine to himfelfe and Army. 110  
*Heer's* one in Court, *Baumont*, by whom I fent  
 All graunts and writings backe, which made it mine,  
 Before his daughter dy'd by his owne fentence,  
 As freely as vnask'd he gaue it to me.

*Bau.* They are here to be feene.

*Charmi.* Open the casket.

Perufe that deed of gift.

*Rom.* Halfe of the danger 115

Already is difcharg'd: the other part  
 As brauely, and you are not onely free,  
 But crownd with praife for euer.

*Du Croy.* 'Tis apparent.

*Charmi.* Your ftate, my Lord, againe is yours.

*Roch.* Not mine,

I am not of the world, if it can prosper, 120  
 (And being iuftly got, Ile not examine  
 Why it fhould be fo fatall) doe you beftow it  
 On pious vfes. Ile goe feeke a graue.

And yet for prooffe, I die in peace, your pardon  
 I afke, and as you grant it me, may Heauen 125

Your confcience, and thefe Iudges free you from *Exit*  
 What you are charg'd with. So farewell for euer.— *Roch.*

*Nouall fe.* Ile be mine owne guide. Paffion, nor example  
 Shall be my leaders. I haue loft a fonne,  
 A fonne, graue Iudges, I require his blood 130  
 From his accurfed homicide.

*Charmi.* What reply you

In your defence for this?

*Cha.* I but attended

Your Lordfhips pleasure. For the fact, as of  
 The former, I confefse it, but with what  
 Bafe wrongs I was vnwillingly drawne to it, 135  
 To my few wordes there are fome other proofes  
 To witneffe this for truth, when I was married:

For there I muſt begin. The flayne *Nouall*  
 Was to my wife, in way of our French courtſhip,  
 A moſt deuoted ſeruant, but yet aym'd at 140  
 Nothing but meanes to quench his wanton heate,  
 His heart being neuer warm'd by lawfull fires  
 As mine was (Lords:) and though on theſe preſumptions,  
 Ioynd to the hate betweene his houſe and mine,  
 I might with opportunity and eaſe 145  
 Haue found a way for my reuenge, I did not;  
 But ſtill he had the freedom as before  
 When all was mine, and told that he abus'd it  
 With ſome vnſeemely licence, by my friend  
 My appou'd friend *Romont*, I gaue no credit 150  
 To the reporter, but reprou'd him for it  
 As one vncourtly and malicious to him.  
 What could I more, my Lords? yet after this  
 He did continue in his firſt purſute  
 Hoter then euer, and at length obtaind it; 155  
 But how it came to my moſt certaine knowledge,  
 For the dignity of the court and my owne honour  
 I dare not ſay.

*Nou. ſe.* If all may be beleeu'd  
 A paſſionate priſoner ſpeakes, who is ſo fooliſh  
 That durſt be wicked, that will appeare guilty? 160  
 No, my graue Lords: in his impunity  
 But giue example vnto iealous men  
 To cut the throats they hate, and they will neuer  
 Want matter or pretence for their bad ends.

*Charmi.* You muſt find other proofes to ſtrengthen theſe 165  
 But more preſumptions.

*Du Croy.* Or we ſhall hardly  
 Allow your innocence.

*Cha.* All your attempts

138, after *begin* . —, (G., S.—C. & M. incloſe *For . . . begin* in ( )'s.

139 *n* in *French* is inverted in Q.

150 *appou'd*—i. e., *approu'd*; in Q. the *r* is wanting as above. Later editors correct.

166 *more—mere* (C., f. See Notes.

Shall fall on me, like brittle shafts on armour,  
 That breake themselues; or like waues against a rocke,  
 That leaue no signe of their ridiculous fury 170  
 But foame and splinters, my innocence like these  
 Shall stand triumphant, and your malice serue  
 But for a trumpet; to proclaime my conquest  
 Nor shall you, though you doe the worst fate can,  
 How ere condemne, affright an honest man. 175

*Rom.* May it please the Court, I may be heard.

*Nou. fe.* You come not

To raile againe? but doe, you shall not finde,  
 Another *Rochfort*.

*Rom.* In *Nouall* I cannot.

But I come furnished with what will stop  
 The mouth of his conspiracy against the life 180  
 Of innocent *Charaloyes*. Doe you know this Character?

*Nou. fe.* Yes, 'tis my sonnes.

*Rom.* May it please your Lordships, reade it,

And you shall finde there, with what vehemency  
 He did sollicite *Beaumelle*, how he had got  
 A promise from her to inioy his wishes, 185  
 How after he abiur'd her company,  
 And yet, but that 'tis fit I spare the dead,  
 Like a damnd villaine, affoone as recorded.  
 He brake that oath, to make this manifest  
 Produce his bands and hers.

*Enter Aymer, Florimell, Bellapert.*

*Charmi.* Haue they tooke their oathes? 190

*Rom.* They haue; and rather then indure the racke,  
 Confesse the time, the meeting, nay the act;  
 What would you more? onely this matron made  
 A free discouery to a good end;

168 *fall—fail* (M.)

169 *like*—omitted by G. & S.

170 *figne—signs* (S.)

180 *against—'gainst* (G., S.)

184 *had*—omitted by G.

190 *bands—bawds* (C., f.)

190, s. d. *Enter Aymer, etc.—Enter Officers with Aymer, etc.* (G., S.)

190 *tooke—ta'en* (G.)



And therefore I fue to the Court, the may not  
Be plac'd in the blacke list of the delinquents. 195

*Pont.* I see by this, Nouals reuenge needs me,  
And I shall doe.

*Charmi.* 'Tis euident.

*Nou. fe.* That I  
Till now was neuer wretched, here's no place  
To curfe him or my ftars. *Exit Nouall junior.*

*Charmi.* Lord *Charalois*, 200  
The iniurie: you haue fuftain'd, appeare  
So worthy of the mercy of the Court,  
That notwithstanding you haue gone beyond  
The letter of the Law, they yet acquit you.

*Pont.* But in Nouall, I doe condemne him thus. 205

*Cha.* I am flayne.

*Rom.* Can I looke on? Oh murderous wretch,  
Thy challenge now I anfwere. So die with him.

*Charmi.* A guard: difarme him.

*Rom.* I yeeld vp my fword  
Vnforc'd. Oh *Charaloys*.

*Cha.* For fhame, *Romont*, 210  
Mourne not for him that dies as he hath liu'd,  
Still conftant and vnmou'd: what's falne vpon me,  
Is by Heauens will, becaufe I made my felfe  
A Iudge in my owne caufe without their warrant:  
But he that lets me know thus much in death,  
With all good men forgiue mee.

*Pont.* I receiue 215  
The vengeance, which my loue not built on vertue,  
Has made me worthy, worthy of.

*Charmi.* We are taught

201 *iniurie*:—C., f. read *injuries*, the colon in the Q. being blurred to  
appear like a broken s.

205, end. —C., f. insert s. d.: *Stabs him*.

206 *I am—I'm* (C., M).

207, end —C., f. insert s. d.: *Stabs Pontalier*. See Notes

215, after *mee*. —C., f. insert s. d.: *Dies*.

215–217 —lines in Q. are: *I . . . loue | Not . . . of*.

217 *worthy, worthy of*—*worthy of* (C., M).

217, after *of*. —C., f. insert s. d.: *Dies*.

217 *We are—We're* (C., M).

By this sad president, how iust foeuer  
 Our reasons are to remedy our wrongs,  
 We are yet to leaue them to their will and power, 220  
 That to that purpose haue authority.  
 For you, *Romont*, although in your excuse  
 You may plead, what you did, was in reuenge  
 Of the dishonour done vnto the Court:  
 Yet since from vs you had not warrant for it, 225  
 We banish you the State: for these, they shall,  
 As they are found guilty or innocent,  
 Be set free, or suffer punishment. *Excunt omnes.*

FINIS

220 *We are—We're* (C., M.)

227 *As—A* (M., misprint)

228 *Be set—Or be set* (C., M., G.—*Be or set* (S.)

Firft Song.

**F***Ie, ceafe to wonder,  
Though you are heare Orpheus with his Iuory Lute,  
Moue Trees and Rockes.  
Charme Bulls, Beares, and men more fauage to be mute,  
Weake foolish finger, here is one,  
Would haue transform'd thy felfe, to ftone.*

5

Second Song.

A Dialogue betweene *Nouall*, and *Beaumelle*.

*Man.*

**S***Et Phoebus, fet, a fayrer funne doth rife,  
From the bright Radience of my Mrs. eyes  
Then euer thou begat'ft. I dare not looke,  
Each haire a golden line, each word a hooke,  
The more I fturie, the more I ftill am tooke.*

5

*Wom.*

*Fayre feruant, come, the day thefe eyes doe lend  
To warme thy blood, thou doeft fo vainely fpend.  
Come ftangled breath.*

*Man.*

These songs are printed thus in an Appendix at the end of the play in Q., G., and the edition of Hartley Coleridge. The *First Song* is inserted at its proper point in the text—II, i, after line 134—by C., M., Cunningham, and S.;—so, too, the *Second Song*, after line 131 of II, ii. The other two songs were omitted in C., and appear in an appendix of vol. 4 of M.,—there wrongly assigned (by D.) to the “passage over the stage” which closes Act II. Gifford correctly assigns them to follow respectively IV, ii, 50; and IV, ii, 62;—where they are printed in the text of Cunningham and S.

*First Song*—A DIRGE (G., S.)

*Second Song*—A SONG BY AYMER (G., S.)

*A . . . Nouall, and Beaumelle.*—*A . . . a Man and a Woman.* (C., f.)

2-4 —lines in Q.: *From . . . begat'ft.* | *I dare . . . line,* | *Each word . . . hooke,* .

7 *doeft*—*dost* (C., f.)

8 *Come ftangled*—*Come, strangle* (M., f.)

*What noate so sweet as this,  
That calles the fpirits to a further bliffe?*

Wom.

*Yet this out-fauours wine, and this Perfume.*

10

Man.

*Let's die, I languish, I consume.*

#### CITIZENS SONG OF THE COURTIER.

**C***ourtier, if thou needs wilt wiue,  
From this lesson learne to thriue.*

*If thou match a Lady, that*

*Passes thee in birth and fstate,*

*Let her curious garments be*

5

*Twice aboute thine owne degree;*

*This will draw great eyes vpon her,*

*Get her seruants and thee honour.*

#### COURTIERS SONG OF THE CITIZEN.

**P***oore Citizen, if thou wilt be  
A happy husband, learne of me;*

*To set thy wife first in thy shop,*

*A faire wife, a kinde wife, a sweet wife, sets a poore man vp.*

*What though thy shelues be ne're so bare:*

5

*A woman still is currant ware:*

*Each man will cheapen, foe, and friend,*

*But whilst thou art at tother end,*

*What ere thou seeft, or what doft heare,*

*Foole, haue no eye to, nor an care;*

10

*And after supper for her sake,*

*When thou hast fed, snort, though thou wake:*

*What though the Gallants call thee mome?*

*Yet with thy lanthorne light her home:*

*Then looke into the town and tell,*

15

*If no such Tradefmen there doe dwell.*

(Citizens Song) 3 and 4 *If . . . fstate*,—printed as one line in Q.

7 *seruants*—its *u* is inverted in Q.

(Courtiers Song) 16 *Tradefmen*—tradesman (M).

## NOTES

[*Dramatis personae.*] *Charalois*—the name *Charalois* is a corruption of *Charolais*, the Count of Charolais being the hereditary title of the heir-apparent of the Duchy of Burgundy, for whom the county of Charolais, an arrière-fief of Burgundy, was reserved as an appanage. This domain had been purchased by Philip the Bold for his son, John the Fearless.

I, i, 4. *argue me of*—obsolete construction: "accuse me of." Cf. Ray, *Disc.* II, v, 213: "Erroneously argues Hubert Thomas . . . of a mistake."

I, i, 7. *dispence with*—give special exemption from. Cf. I, ii, 87.

I, i, 33. *This fuch*—*This for this is* is a common Elizabethan construction. Cf. "O this the poison of deep grief"—*Hamlet*, IV, v, 76; "This a good block"—*Lear*, IV, vi, 187.

I, i, 45. *tooke vp*—borrowed. Cf. Shakespeare, *Henry IV, Part II*, I, ii, 46: "if a man is through with them in honest taking up, they stand upon security."

I, i, 55-6. *Your fable habit, with the hat and cloak . . . haue power*—the details of hat, cloak, and ribbons, interposed between subject and verb, have attracted the latter into the plural, to the violation of its agreement with its substantive.

I, i, 70. *in that*—i. e., in the fact that justice had no such guards.

I, i, 73-7. For the allusion to *Cerberus* and the *fops*, cf. Virgil's picture of Aeneas' journey to Hades (*Aeneid*, VI, 417-425): "Huge Cerberus makes these realms to resound with barking from his tripple jaws, stretched at his enormous length in a den that fronts the gate. To whom the prophetess, seeing his neck now bristle with horrid snakes, flings a soporific cake of honey and medicated grain. He, in the mad rage of hunger, opening his three mouths, snatches the offered morsel and, spread on the ground, relaxes his monstrous limbs, and is extended at vast length over all the cave. Aeneas, now that the keeper [of Hell] is buried [in sleep], seizes the passage and swift overpasses the bank of that flood whence there is no return."—*Davidson's trans.*

I, i, 75. *fertyle headed*—*many headed*. *fertyle* is used in the now obsolete sense of *abundant*.

I, i, 92. *fuch, whose*—for the construction, cf. Shakespeare: "Such I will have, whom I am sure he knows not from the enemy."—*All's Well*, III, iv, 24.

I, i, 99. *men religious*—the adjective is regularly placed after its noun in Eliz. Eng. when the substantive is unemphatic and the modifier not a mere epithet, but essential to the sense. See Abbott, *S. G.* § 419.

I, i, 137-8.—The thought of these lines is undeveloped, the phrasing being broken and disconnected. It is a scornful observation on the part

of Romont that whether or not Novall takes papers depends on how the matter is brought before him—and he is about to add that there is a way in which Charalois can manage to gain his point, when he breaks off with the cry, "Follow him!" *Conuayance* = contrivance.

I, i, 164. *parchment toils*—snares in the shape of documents upon parchment, such as bonds, mortgages, etc.

I, i, 166. *Luxury*—used here in the modern sense,—not, as more commonly in Elizabethan times, with the meaning, *laciviousness, lust*. The thought of the somewhat involved period which ends with this line is, that the creditors prayed only on an occasion when they feared to lose their clutch on some rich spendthrift—on which occasion they would pray to the devil to invent some new and fantastic pleasure which would lure their victim back into the toils.

I, ii, 11. *Dijon*—the scene of the drama,—situated on the western border of the fertile plain of Burgundy, and at the confluence of the Ouche and the Suzon. It was formerly the capital of the province of Burgundy, the dukes of which acquired it early in the eleventh century, and took up their residence there in the thirteenth century. For the decoration of the palace and other monuments built by them, eminent artists were gathered from northern France and Flanders, and during this period the town became one of the great intellectual centers of France. The union of the duchy with the crown in 1477 deprived Dijon of the splendor of the ducal court, but to counterbalance this loss it was made the capital of the province and the seat of a *parlement*. To-day it possesses a population of some 65,000, and is a place of considerable importance.

I, ii, 21-3. *Nor now . . . that I vndertooke, forfake it*.—The expression is elliptical, the verb of the preceding period being in the future indicative, —whereas here the incomplete verb is in the conditional mood. In full: *Nor now . . . that I undertook, would I forsake it*.

I, ii, 56. *determine of*—*of* is the preposition in obs. usage which follows *determine* used, as here, in the sense of *decide, come to a judicial decision, come to a decision on (upon)*. Cf. IV, iv, 82.

I, ii, 57. *to*—in addition to.

I, ii, 66. *become*—modern editors, beginning with Mason, read *became*; but *become* may be taken as a variant form of the past tense (or even as participle for *having become*, with nom. absolute construction, though this is less likely).

I, ii, 91-2. *May force you . . . plead at*—i. e. "may cause your dismissal from the bar."

I, ii, 107. *purple-colour'd*—Novall wears the official red robe of judge.

I, ii, 123-4. *the subtill Fox of France, The politique Lewis*—Louis XI of France, an old enemy of Burgundy.

I, ii, 127. *If that, etc.*—Gradually, as the interrogatives were recognized as relatives, the force of *that, so, as*, in "when *that*", "when *so*", "when *as*", seems to have tended to make the relative more general and indefinite;

"who so" being now nearly (and once quite) as indefinite as "whosoever." . . . In this sense, by analogy, *that* was attached to other words, such as "if", "though", "why", etc.—Abbott, S. G. § 287.

Cf.

"If that rebellion

Came like itself, in base and abject routs."

*Henry IV, Part II, IV, i, 32.*

The same construction appears in V, iii, 95.

I, ii, 163. *Writ man*—i. e., wrote himself down as a man.

I, ii, 170. *Granson, Morat, Nancy*—the "three memorable overthrows" which Charles the Bold suffered at the hands of the Swiss cantons and Duke René of Lorraine. The battle of Granson took place March 3, 1476; that of Morat, June 22, 1476; that of Nancy, January 5, 1477. On each occasion the army of Charles was annihilated; and finally at Nancy he was himself slain. These defeats ended the power of Burgundy.

I, ii, 171. *The warlike Charloyes*—Charles the Bold, the Duke of Burgundy.

I, ii, 185. *Ill ayres*—noxious exhalations, miasma.

I, ii, 194-5. *They are onely good men, that pay what they owe.*

2 Cred. *And fo they are.*

1 Cred.

*'Tis the City Doctrine.*

Cf. Shakespeare in *The Merchant of Venice*, I, iii, 12 ff.:

"*Shy.* Antonio is a good man.

*Bass.* Have you heard any imputation to the contrary?

*Shy.* Ho, no, no, no, no! My meaning in saying he is a good man is to have you understand me that he is sufficient."

I, ii, 201. *right*—so in all texts. With this word the meaning is perfectly plain, but the substitution, in its place, of *weight* would better sustain the figure used in the preceding line. *Weight* is a word which it is not unlikely the printer would mis-read from the Ms. as *right*.

I, ii, 207. *in your danger*—regularly, "in your power", "at your mercy"; so here, "in your debt".

I, ii, 245. *As*—used here in its demonstrative meaning, to introduce a parenthetical clause. Cf. Abbott, S. G. § 110.

II, i, 13. *fits*—the common Elizabethan 3rd. person plural in *s*, generally and without warrant altered by modern editors. See Abbott, S. G. § 333.

Cf. *keepes*, V, ii, 37.

II, i, 28. *was—monies* is taken in the collective sense.

II, i, 46. *interd a lively graue*—i. e., *enter'd a lively [living] grave*. G., who first prints it so, considers he has made a change in the first word, taking it in the Q. for *interr'd*, as does M., who suggests in a footnote the reading: *enters alive the grave*. But *interd* may be, and is best, taken as merely an old spelling for *enter'd*, naturally attracted to the *i*-form by the presence of the word *interment* in the preceding line.

II, i, 63. *Remember best, forget not gratitude*—ellipsis for: *Remember best who forget not gratitude*. Modern usage confines the omission of the relative mostly to the objective. In Eliz. Eng., however, the nominative

relative was even more frequently omitted, especially when the antecedent clause was emphatic and evidently incomplete, and where the antecedent immediately preceded the verb to which the relative would be subject. See Abbott, S. G., § 244.

Cf. III, i, 134-5; i, 139; i, 332; IV, ii, 61.

II, i, 65. *viperous*—according to various classical authorities [e. g., Pliny, X, 82], the young of vipers eat their way forth to light through the bowels of their dam. The figure here seems to be somewhat confused, as the dead hero is the *son* of the country, his mother, who devours *him*. The thought, perhaps, in the mind of the dramatist, albeit ill-expressed, was that the mother-country owed her existence to her son, and, viper-like had devoured the author of her life.

II, i, 66. *eate*—owing to the tendency to drop the inflectional ending *-en*, the Elizabethans frequently used the curtailed forms of past participles, which are common in Early English: "I have spoke, forgot, writ, chid," etc.—Abbott, S. G., § 343. Cf. *broke*, II, ii, 27; *spoke*, III, i, 3; *begot*, IV, iv, 154; 170.

II, i, 83. *golden calf*—the figure, from its immediate application to a *dolt of great wealth*, is transferred to the false god whom the children of Israel worshipped at the foot of Mount Sinai.

II, i, 93-4. *Would they not fo'*, etc.—the Q. reading is to be preferred to either of the modern emendations. It is probably in the sense of "Would they no more but so?" with the ensuing declaration that in that case they would keep their tears to stop (fill?) bottles (probably meaning lachrimatories or phials used in ancient times for the preservation of tears of mourning).

II, i, 98-9. *Y'are ne're content, Crying nor laughing*—The meaning is, of course: "You are never content with us, whether we are crying or laughing."

II, i, 100. *Both with a birth*—i. e., both together, at the same time.

II, i, 137. *Bermudas*—The Bermuda islands, known only through the tales of early navigators who suffered shipwreck there, enjoyed a most unsavory reputation in Elizabethan times, as being the seat of continual tempests, and the surrounding waters "a hellish sea for thunder, lightning, and storms." Cf. Shakespeare, *The Tempest*, I, ii, 269: "the still-vexed Bermoothes." They were said to be enchanted, and inhabited by witches and devils. They were made famous by the shipwreck there in 1609 of Sir George Somers; the following year one of his party, Sil. Jordan, published *A Discovery of the Bermudas, otherwise called the Isle of Devils*.

Field has another reference to "the Barmuthoes" in *Amends for Ladies*, III, iv; but there it is not clear whether he means the islands or certain narrow passages north of Covent Garden, which went by the slang name of "the Bermudas" or "the Streights." It is in this latter sense that the word is used in Jonson's *The Devil is an Ass*, II, i.

II, i, 139. *Exact the strictneffe*—i. e., require a strict enforcement of the sentence which limits Charalois to the confines of the prison.



II, i, 144. *usurers relief*, etc.—a rather awkward expression, so phrased for the sake of the end-scene rhyme. The thought seems to be: "The relief which usurers have to offer mourns, if the debtors have (exhibit) too much grief." Charalois' remark is, of course, ironical.

II, ii, 10. *electuary*—a medicinal conserve or paste, consisting of a powder or some other ingredient mixed with honey, preserve, or syrup of some other kind. Beaumelle means that Florimal is the medicine and Bellapert the sweet which makes it palatable.

II, ii, 17. *ferue*—G. and S. read *served*, which is certainly correct. Not only is there nothing throughout the play to suggest that Beaumelle's mother is still alive, but she herself has just spoken of "you two my women" (l. 11).

II, ii, 18. *a peepe out*—a "pip" [old spelling *peepe*] is one of the spots on playing cards, dice, or dominoes. The allusion is to a game of cards called "one-and-thirty"; thirty-two is a pip too many.

II, ii, 21-2. *the mother of the maydes*—a title properly applied to the head of the maids of honour in a Royal household.

II, ii, 22. *mortife*—there is a significant ambiguity to the word Bellapert uses. It means "bring into subjection," "render dead to the world and the flesh;" it formerly had also a baleful meaning: "to kill;" "to destroy the vitality, vigor, or activity of."

II, ii, 32. *vanuable, to make you thus—valuable* is used in its generic sense of *value-able, of sufficient value*.

II, ii, 71. *turn'd in her varieties*—G., S. read: *trimm'd in her varieties*—i. e., "decked in her varieties [varied aspects]." But adherence to the Q. is possible, with the meaning, "fashioned in her varieties."

II, ii, 82. *walkes not vnder a weede*—i. e., "wears not a garment," "is not in existence."

II, ii, 88. *Tiffue*—a rich kind of cloth, often interwoven with gold or silver. So again in II, ii, 175.

II, ii, 89. *a three-leg'd lord*—the meaning is that Young Novall cannot independently "stand upon his own legs," but requires the triple support of himself, Liladam, and Aymer.

II, ii, 96. *musicke house*—a public hall or saloon for musical performances.

II, ii, 99-100. *in the Galley foyft*, etc.—a Galley-foist was a state barge, especially that of the Lord Mayor of London. This, however, can hardly be the meaning of the word here, used as it is in connection with *Bullion*, which were trunk-hose, puffed out at the upper part, in several folds; and with *Quirpo*, a variant of *cuerpo*—i. e., *in undress*. "Galley-foist" may be the name of some dress of the period, so-called for its resemblance to the gaily bedecked Mayor's-barge. But it is not unlikely, as Mason suggests, that *The Galley-foist* and *The Bullion* were the names of taverns of that day; or else of houses of public resort for some kind of amusement.

II, ii, 104. *fkip*—so in all texts. But Field has elsewhere (*Woman is a Weathercock*, II, i.): "and then my lord . . . casts a suit every quarter,

which I *slip* into." It is probable that the word was the same in both passages,—though whether *skip* or *slip* I have no means of determining.

II, ii, 119. *St Omers*—more properly, *St. Omer*, a town of northern France. A College of Jesuits was located there, and the point of Novall's comparison is perhaps an allusion to the mean appearance of Jesuit spies who would come from thence to England on some pretext, such as to see their friends during the Christmas season.

II, ii, 122. *ly'n perdieu*—"to lie perdu" is properly a military term for, "to be placed as a sentinel or outpost," especially in an exposed position. *Ly'n* is one of the many obsolete forms of the past participle of the verb "to lie."

II, ii, 125. *tye my hand*—i. e., tie the ribbon-strings which depended from the sleeve over the hand.

II, ii, 163. *flight neglect*—contemptuous disrespect.

II, ii, 174. *bile*—all editors after the Q. read *boil*. *Bile* was an old spelling for *boil*; but in the other sense, one of the "four humours" of medieval physiology, the passage is perfectly clear, and the figure perhaps even more effective.

II, ii, 186. *eager relish*—acid taste. The figure is that the law in itself is often like a sharp and bitter flavor, but that a good judge will sweeten this.

II, ii, 250 *s. d.* *Drawes a Curtayne*—the curtain of the alcove or backstage, within which was placed the "treasure," thus to be revealed.

II, ii, 298. *in which yours*—i. e., "because of the fact of her being yours."

II, ii, 301. *for poore and worthleffe I—I for me*, like other irregularities in pronominal inflection, was not infrequent in Elizabethan times. Cf. Abbott, S. G., § 205.

II, ii, 326. *Curtius-like*—like Marcus Curtius, legendary hero of ancient Rome. See Livy, vii, 6.

II, ii, *final s. d.* *while the Act is playing*—i. e., while the interlude music is played, at the close of the Act.

III, i, 18. *relish*—a trace or tinge of some quality, a suggestion.

—In III, i, 20: *a flavor*; or, if read with the Q.'s punctuation, a verb: *give a relish*. It appears preferable, however, to take the passage as punctuated by G., S., which makes *relish* a noun.

III, i, 29. *take me with you*—understand me.

III, i, 37. *fudden*—adv. for *suddenly*. The *-ly* suffix was frequently omitted in Elizabethan times.

III, i, 45. *Such as are faire*, etc.—the connection goes back to l. 42, Bellapert taking up again the thread of her remark which Novall's objection and her summary answer thereto had broken in upon.

III, i, 120. *Christian*—probably used here in the colloq. sense of: *a human being*, as distinguished from a brute; a "decent" or "respectable" person. Cf. Shakespeare, *Twelfth Night*, I, iii, 89: "Methinks . . . I have no more wit than a Christian, or an ordinary man has."

III, i, 122. *The entertainment of your visitation*—i. e., the entertainment which your visit received.

III, i, 123. *on* [old spelling for *one*]—i. e., a visitation.

III, i, 126. *Muske-cat*—the civet-cat; applied as a term of contempt to a fop, as being a person perfumed with musk.

III, i, 139. *there is now speaks to you*—G., S. omit *is*, at the same time clearing the construction and securing a more regular metre. The Q. reading, however, is perfectly possible, as an ellipsis, by omission of the subject relative, for, *there is that now speaks to you* [i. e., *there is now speaking to you*], or even, by a change of punctuation, *there is—now speaks to you*—, etc.

III, i, 148. *As Caefar, did he liue, could not except at*—see Plutarch's *Life of Julius Caesar*, Chapters 9 & 10, wherein it is narrated how Caesar divorced his wife, Pompeia, when scandal assailed her name, although he denied any knowledge as to her guilt; "'Because' said he, 'I would have the chastity of my wife clear even of suspicion.'"

III, i, 148. *except at*—take exception at.

III, i, 159. *pointed*—all editors after the Q. read *pointed*, an absolutely unnecessary and unwarranted emendation. *Pointed* means "fitted or furnished with tagged points or laces;" "wearing points;" "laced." Cf. Maurice Hewlett's novel, *The Queen's Quair*, p. 83: "saucy young men, trunked, puffed, pointed, trussed and doubled." Huloot in his Dictionary (1752) has: "Poynted, or tyed with poynts, *ligulatus*."

III, i, 167. *This pretty rag*—i. e., the "clout" mentioned in II, ii, 123.

III, i, 173. *in spite of*—in scorn of, in defiance of.

III, i, 184. *thy*—so the Q. All later editors read *this*. It is not impossible, of course, that Romont should begin an oath "By thy hand," and Beaumelle flash back at him "And sword," transferring the *thy* from herself to him. But Romont would be more likely to swear by his own hand than by Beaumelle's.

III, i, 188. *caft fuburb whores*—prostitutes who had been cashiered from service. Houses of ill-fame were customarily located in the suburbs.

III, i, 191. *legion*—i. e., of evil spirits. Cf. *Mark*, v, 9.

III, i, 193. *horne-mad*—the word was originally applied to horned beasts, in the sense: "enraged so as to horn any one;" hence of persons: "stark mad," "mad with rage," "furious." By word-play it acquires its sense in the present passage. "mad with rage at having been made a cuckold."

III, i, 202. *yellow*—this color was regarded as a token or symbol of jealousy.

III, i, 211. *Carted*—carried in a cart through the streets, by way of punishment or public exposure (especially as the punishment of a bawd).

III, i, 261. *in distance*—within reach, in striking distance.

III, i, 331. *as it would tire*—as appears to be used for *as if*; in reality the *if* is implied in the (conditional) subjunctive.—Abbott, S. G., § 107.

III, i, 331. *a beadle*—it was one of the duties of a beadle to whip petty offenders.

III, i, 352. *So I not heard them*—Abbott explains this construction, not uncommon in the Elizabethan period, as an omission of the auxiliary verb "do" (S. G. § 305). But here the main verb is *heard*, whereas, according to his explanation, grammar would require *hear*. May not the construction be better taken as a simple, though to our ears cumbrous, inversion of, *So I heard them not?*

III, i, 366. *caufe*—affair, business—so also in III, i, 377.

III, i, 388. *Calenture*—a disease incident to sailors within the tropics; a burning fever.

III, i, 428-9. *flegme . . . chollet*—in the old physiologies the predominance of the "humour, phlegm," was held to cause constitutional indolence or apathy,—the predominance of "choler" to cause irascibility.

III, i, 432. *'em*—grammatical precision would require *him*, as is substituted in M., f. In Field's rapid, loose style, however, a change of construction in mid-sentence is not improbable, and the Q. reading may very well reproduce accurately what he wrote.

III, i, 441. *thou curious impertinent*—the epithet is from *The Curious Impertinent* of Cervantes, a story imbedded in *Don Quixote, Part I.*

III, i, 463. *I not accuse*—cf. note on l. 354.

III, i, 467. *Ere live*—*Ere I should live* is required in full by strict grammar, but Field's verse is frequently elliptical. Gifford's emendation to *lived* for the sake of grammatical regularity, which is followed by all later editors, is unwarranted.

III, i, 467. *mens marginall fingers*—the figure is an allusion to the ancient custom of placing an index hand in the margin of books, to direct the reader's attention to a striking passage. So does Romont picture men's fingers pointing to the story of Charalois as a noteworthy and lamentable thing. Cf. IV, i, 56.

III, i, 469-470. *An Emperour put away his wife for touching Another man*—The source of this allusion is not apparent. Can it be a perversion in the mind of Field of the story of Caesar's divorce of his wife, to which Massinger has already referred above (l. 148)?

IV, i, 3. *a flaxe*—the flax wick of a lamp or candle.

IV, i, 3. *a red headed womans chamber*—Since early times red-haired individuals have been supposed to emit an emanation having a powerful sexually exciting influence. In the Romance countries, France and Italy, this belief is universally diffused.—Iwan Block: *The Sexual Life of our Time*—transl. by Eden Paul—p. 622.

Cf. also Gabrielle D'Annunzio: *Il Piacere*, p. 90:

"Have you noticed the armpits of Madame Chrysoloras? Look!"

"The Duke di Beffi indicated a dancer, who had upon her brow, white as a marble of Luni, a firebrand of red tresses, like a priestess of Alma Tadema. Her bodice was fastened on the shoulders by mere ribbons, and there were revealed beneath the armpits two luxuriant tufts of red hair.

"Bomminaco began to discourse upon the peculiar odour which red-haired women have."

IV, i, 13. *Cell*—so in the Q. and all later texts. Yet the word is utterly unsatisfactory to the sense of the passage; it should almost certainly be *coil*—i. e., tumult, confusion, fuss, ado. Cf. Field in *Amends for Ladies*, II, iv: "Here's a coil with a lord and his sister."

IV, i, 23. *a lace*—a trimming of lace.

IV, i, 27. *pickadille*—the expansive collar fashionable in the early part of the seventeenth century.

IV, i, 27. *in puncto*—in point; i. e., in proper condition, in order.

IV, i, 32. *Iacobs staffe*—an instrument formerly used for measuring the altitude of the sun; a cross-staff.

IV, i, 32. *Ephimerides*—a table showing the positions of a heavenly body for a series of successive days.

IV, i, 39-40. *if he would but cut the coate according to the cloth ffill*—"to cut one's coat after one's cloth" was: "to adapt one's self to circumstances;" "to measure expense by income." The point of its employment here is not plain; it is doubtful if anything were very clear in Field's own mind, who was merely trying to hit off an epigrammatical phrase. Perhaps, "make the coat match the man."

IV, i, 72. *Narciffus-like*—like Narcissus, in classic myth. See Ovid, *Meta.*, iii, 341-510.

IV, i, 72. *should*—G., f. read *shouldst*, but the breach of agreement between subject and verb is to be explained by the attraction of the verb to the third person by the interposed *Narciffus-like*; just as four lines further on we find *shouldst* for *should*, because of the similar intrusion between subject and verb of (*but thy selfe sweete Lord*).

IV, i, 92. *a Barber Surgeon*—formerly the barber was also a regular practitioner in surgery and dentistry. Cf. Beaumont & Fletcher, *The Knight of the Burning Pestle*, III, iv.

IV, i, 96. *ouerthrowne*—M., f. read *overflown*, i. e., become excessive or inordinate; so full that the contents run over the brim. The reading of the Q., however, is quite intelligible,—taking *overthrown* in the sense of *thrown too strongly*.

IV, i, 135. *Colbran*—more properly *Colbrand* or *Collebrand*, a wicked giant in the medieval romance of Guy of Warwick. He is the champion of the invading King of Denmark, who challenges the English King, Athelstan, to produce a knight who can vanquish Colbrand, or to yield as his vassal. In this hour of need Guy appears, fights with the giant, and kills him.

IV, i, 137. *hee'l make some of you smoake*,—i. e., "make some of you suffer." Cf. Beaumont & Fletcher, *The Knight of the Burning Pestle*, I, ii, 136: "I'll make some of 'em smoke for't;" and Shakespeare, *Titus Andronicus*, IV, iii, 111: "Or some of you shall smoke for it in Rome."

IV, i, 138. *a Consort*—"In the author's age, the taverns were infested with itinerant bands of musicians, each of which (jointly and individually) was called a noise or *consort*: these were sometimes invited to play for the company, but seem more frequently to have thrust themselves, unasked,

into it, with an offer of their services: their intrusion was usually prefaced with, 'By your leave, gentlemen, will you hear any music?'"—Gifford.

IV, i, 145. *of*—formerly sometimes substituted, as here, for *on* in colloquial usage. So also *on* for *of*, as in l. 148. Cf. also l. 182.

IV, i, 197-8. *'tis Fairies treafure Which but reueal'd brings on the blabbers ruine.*—To confide in any one about a fairy's gift rendered it void, according to popular tradition, and drew down the fairy giver's anger. In instance, see John Aubrey's *Remains* (Reprinted in *Publications of the Folk-Lore Society*, vol. IV, p. 102): "Not far from Sir Bennet Hoskyns, there was a labouring man, that rose up early every day to go to worke; who for a good while many dayes together found a ninepence in the way that he went. His wife wondering how he came by so much money, was afraid he gott it not honestlye; at last he told her, and afterwards he never found any more."

There are numerous literary allusions to this superstition: e. g., Shakespeare, *The Winter's Tale*, III, iii, 127, ff.: "This is fairy gold, boy; and 'twill prove so. Up with't, keep it close. . . . We are lucky, boy; and to be so still requires nothing but secrecy."

And Field himself in *Woman is a Weathercock*, I, i:

"I see you labour with some serious thing,  
And think (like fairy's treasure) to reveal it,  
Will cause it vanish."

IV, i, 210-1. *louers periury*, etc.—that Jove laughed at and overlooked lovers' perjuries was a familiar proverb. Cf. Massinger, *The Parliament of Love*, C-G. 192 a: "Jupiter and Venus smile At lovers' perjuries;" and Shakespeare, *Romeo and Juliet*, II, ii, 92: "at lovers' perjuries, They say, Jove laughs." The saying goes back to Ovid's *Art of Love*, book I;—as Marlowe has translated it:

"For Jove himself sits in the azure skies,  
And laughs below at lovers' perjuries."

IV, ii, 71. *On all aduantage take thy life*—i. e., "Taking every advantage of you, kill you."

IV, ii, 84. Such whose bloods wrongs, or wrong done to *themselues*—the Q.'s regular omission of the possessive apostrophe has in this instance confused later editors in their understanding of the passage. We would write *blood's*,—with the meaning: "Those whom wrongs to kindred or to themselves," etc.

IV, iii, 12. *fo*—there is no direct antecedent, but one is easily understandable from the general sense of what precedes; *to be fo*—i. e., "as you were in thankfulness to the General."

IV, iv, 10. *it*—another case of a pronoun with antecedent merely implied in the general sense of what precedes; *it*—"the fact that I am not worthy the looking on, but only," etc.

IV, iv, 30. *fuch defence*—i. e., "the defence of such a one." *Such* = *qualis*.

IV, iv, 66. *To this*—i. e., to tears.

IV, iv, 70. *thofe fam'd matrones*—cf. Massinger in *The Virgin Martyr*, C-G. 33 a:

"You will rise up with reverence, and no more,  
As things unworthy of your thoughts, remember  
What the canonized Spartan ladies were,  
Which lying Greece so boasts of. Your own matrons,  
Your Roman dames, whose figures you yet keep  
As holy relics, in her history  
Will find a second urn: Gracchus' Cornelia,  
Paulina, that in death desired to follow  
Her husband Seneca, nor Brutus' Portia,  
That swallowed burning coals to overtake him,  
Though all their several worths were given to one,  
With this is to be mention'd."

IV, iv, 112. *on it*—i. e., "on what you say."

IV, iv, 156. *be*—"be" expresses more doubt than "is" after a verb of thinking. Cf. Abbott, S. G., § 299.

V, i, 5. *lay me vp*—imprison me.

V, i, 7. *varlets*—the name given to city bailiffs or sergeants. Perhaps here, however, it is applied merely as a term of abuse.

V, i, 9. *Innes of court man*—a member of one of the four Inns of Court (The Inner Temple, The Middle Temple, Lincoln's Inn, and Gray's Inn), legal societies which served for the Elizabethan the function which our law-schools perform to-day. Overbury says of the Inns of Court Man, in his *Characters*: "Hee is distinguished from a scholler by a pair of silk-stockings, and a beaver hat, which make him contemn a scholler as much as a scholler doth a school-master. . . . He is as far behind a courtier in his fashion, as a scholler is behind him. . . . He laughs at every man whose band sits not well, or that hath not a faire shoo-tie, and he is ashamed to be seen in any mans company that wears not his clothes well. His very essence he placeth in his outside. . . . You shall never see him melancholy, but when he wants a new suit, or feares a sergeant. . . ."

V, i, 13. *coming forth*—appearance in court, or from prison.

V, i, 28. *mauchets*—small loaves or rolls of the finest wheaten bread. There seems to have been a commonplace concerning the huge quantities of bread devoured by tailors. Cf. l. 88 below, and Note.

V, i, 31. *leawe fwordmen*—i. e., swordmen (swaggering ruffians who claim the profession of arms) *on leawe*. It is possible, however, that *leawe* is a misprint (by inversion of a letter) for *leane* = hungry.

V, i, 83. *hangers*—not "short-swords", as in l. 31, but here "pendants", perhaps a part of the hat-band hanging loose, or else loops or straps on the swordbelt, often richly ornamented, from which the sword was hung. Cf. Shakespeare, *Hamlet*, V, ii, 157-167.

V, i, 83. *Hell*—a place under a tailor's shop-board, in which shreds or pieces of cloth, cut off in the process of cutting clothes, are thrown, and looked upon as perquisites. Cf. Overbury's *Characters*, *A Taylor*: "Hee

differeth altogether from God; for with him the best pieces are still marked out for damnation, and without hope of recovery shall be cast down into hell."

V, i, 88. *Our breakfasts famous for the buttréd loaves*—Cf. above l. 28, and Note; also Glapthorne's *Wit in a Constable*, V, i:

"as easily as a Taylor

Would do six hot loaves in a morning fasting,  
And yet dine after."

V, i, 90. *vfe a conscience*—show or feel compunction; be tender-hearted.

V, i, 91. *hall*—a house or building belonging to a guild or fraternity of merchants or tradesmen. At such places the business of the respective guilds was transacted; and in some instances they served as the market-houses for the sale of the goods of the associated members.

V, i, 97. *complete Mounfieur*—perfect gentleman.

V, i, 102. *pantofle*—slipper; here used figuratively for: the shoe-maker's profession.

V, ii, 27. *a barbarous Sythian*—Cf. Purchas' *Pilgrimage* (ed. 1613, p. 333): "They [The Scythians] cut off the noses of men, and imprinted pictures in the flesh of women, whom they overcame: and generally their customes of warre were bloudie: what man soever the Scythian first taketh, he drinketh his bloud: he offereth to the King all the heads of the men he hath slaine in battell: otherwise he may not share in the spoile: the skinnes of their crownes flaid off, they hang at their horse bridles: their skinnes they use to flay for napkins and other uses, and some for cloathing. . . . These customes were general to the Scythians of Europe and Asia (for which cause *Scytharum facinora patrare*, grew into a proverbe of immane crueltie, and their Land was justly called Barbarous)."

V, ii, 40. *made no hornes at me*—to "make horns" at any one was the common method of taunting one with having horns,—i. e., with being a cuckold.

V, ii, 51. *made vp with*—set with the expression of.

V, ii, 102. *by pieces*—in part.

V, iii, 8.—Charm's speech is addressed to Charalois, as is that of Du Croy which follows it.

V, iii, 18 ff.—M., f. insert *when* after *that* of l. 18. This is probably the correct reading. It would be possible, however, to let the line stand without alteration, if the *that* of l. 20 be taken as coordinate with the *that* of l. 18, introducing a second clause depending on *am forry* (instead of correlative with *fo* to introduce a result-clause). With this reading, *left* (l. 22) would be taken as an ellipsis for *being left*; with the emended reading, for *was left*. Though the construction is in doubt, the sense is easy.

V, iii, 22. *vndermine*—an object, *it*, is understood,—i. e., *the building of my life*.

V, iii, 34. *her—its* was rare in Elizabethan usage. Cf. Abbott, S. G., §§ 228, 229.



V, iii, 46. *compassion of*—former obsolete construction for “compassion for.” Cf. Shakespeare, *Henry VI, Part I*, IV, i, 56; “Mov’d with compassion of my country’s wreck.”

V, iii, 59. *motion*—C., f. read *motion’s*,—an uncalled-for emendation, since ellipsis of *is* was not infrequent. Cf. Shakespeare, *Henry V*, IV, i, 197: “’Tis certain, every man that dies ill, the ill [is] upon his own head.”

V, iii, 93. *and yet the fault kept from me*—loose construction, not easily parsed, though the sense is clear.

V, iii, 98. *As . . . to vndergoe*—again a loose construction. It should be, properly: *That . . . he would undergo*, etc.

V, iii, 107-9. *like the fatall gold*, etc.—In this passage the two leaders of the Gauls known to history by the same name appear to be confounded—(1): Brennus, who sacked Rome in 390 B. C., and consented to withdraw after receiving a large ransom of gold;—and (2): Brennus, who led the irruption of the Gauls into Greece in the second century B. C., and attempted to despoil Delphi of its treasure, but did *not* succeed in doing so. The fact that their respective expeditions are said to have borne an immediate sequel of disaster and death for both alike, may be responsible for the dramatist’s mistake.

V, iii, 131. *homicide*—formerly, as here, = *murderer*.

V, iii, 139. *in way of*—in the manner of.

V, iii, 144. *the hate betweenc his house and mine*—cf. III, i, 416.

V, iii, 166. *more prejsumptions*—C., f. read *mere presumptions*, which is probably correct. An alternative possibility should be noted, however: that *presumptions* by mis-reading from the Ms. (or by the mere inversion of a *u*) may be a mis-print for *presumptious* (presumptuous) = *presumptive*, in which case *more* would be retained, with the passage to mean: “You must find other proofs to strengthen these, and they must, moreover, be of a nature to give more reasonable grounds for presumption.”

V, iii, 174-5.—The last two lines of Charalois’ speech are addressed to his judges; what preceded them to Novall.

V, iii, 190. *bands*—the emendation *bawds*, proposed by Coxeter and followed by all subsequent editors, seems almost surely correct. “Bawd” prior to 1700 was a term applied to men as well as—and, indeed, more frequently than—to women. Cf. Shakespeare, *Hamlet*, I, iii, 130.

V, iii, 190. *tooke*—where the common Elizabethan custom of dropping the *-en* inflectional ending of the past participle rendered a confusion with the infinitive liable, the past tense of the verb was used for the participle. Cf. Abbott, S. G., § 343.

V, iii, 193. *this matron*—i. e., Florimel.

V, iii, 205. *in Nouall*—i. e., “in the person of Novall.”

V, iii, 207. *Thy challenge now I aufwere*—this phrase would indicate that Romont crosses swords with Pontalier, and after a moment of fencing runs him through; instead of striking him unawares, as the modern stage direction, “*Stabs Pontalier*,” would imply.

V, iii, 226. *these*—i. e., Aymer, Florimel, and Bellapert.

*Court. Song*, l. 3. first—i. e., "in the front part of," to meet the customers and be herself an attraction and an object of display, while the husband remains "at tother end" (l. 8) of the store.

*Court. Song*, l. 4.—This is a most unduly long line. It seems probable that, in the Ms. from which the play was printed, the three phrases, "A faire wife," "a kinde wife," and "a fweet wife," were *three variant* readings, which, by mistake, were *all* incorporated in the text. Any one of them used alone would give a perfectly normal line.

## GLOSSARY

- affection*, bent, inclination, *penchant*. I, ii, 32.
- allow*, command, approve. IV, i, 9.
- answere*, correspond to. III, i, 82.
- arrests*, stoppages, delays. III, i, 43.
- author*, to be the author, of a statement; to state, declare, say. IV, ii, 19.
- baffled*, disgraced, treated with contumely. IV, i, 112.
- balm*, an aromatic preparation for embalming the dead. II, i, 79.
- band*, a collar or ruff worn round the neck by man or woman. II, ii, 77; etc.
- banquerout*, early spelling of *bankrupt*, which was originally *banke rota* (see N. E. D. for variants under *bankrupt*), from Italian *banca rotta*, of which *banqueroute* is the French adaptation. The modern spelling, *bankrupt*, with the second part of the word assimilated to the equivalent Latin *ruptus*, as in *abrupt*, etc., first appears in 1543. I, i, 127; ii, 88.
- black*, a funereal drapery. II, i, 51; ii, 117.
- brabler*, a quarrelsome fellow; a brawler. III, i, 358.
- braue*, in loose sense of approbation, good, excellent, worthy, etc. I, ii, 256; 292; etc.
- bumfiddles*, beats, thumps. IV, i, 140.
- cabinet*, a secret receptacle; a jewel-box. II, ii, 34.
- canniball*, a strong term of abuse for "blood-thirsty savage." IV, iv, 185.
- Caroch*, coach. II, ii, 28; IV, ii, 95.
- cafe*, exterior; skin or hide of an animal, or garments—hence, perhaps, *disguise*. V, i, 73.
- cenfure*, a judicial sentence. I, ii, 53. —in the sense of *sentence to punishment*. II, ii, 166; 172.
- challenge*, demand. V, ii, 88.
- change*, exchange. III, i, 117. —*chang'd*, I, i, 66.
- charges*, expenses. I, ii, 191.
- charitable*, benevolent, kindly, showing Christian charity. I, i, 117.
- circumftance*, the adjuncts of a fact which make it more or less criminal. V, iii, 52.
- clofe*, close-fitting. IV, i, 124.
- cold*, unimpassioned, deliberate. V, ii, 86.
- coloured*, specious. III, i, 139.
- comely*, becoming, proper, decorous. III, i, 163.
- complement*, observing of ceremony in social relations; formal civility, politeness. III, i, 439.
- conference*, subject of conversation. II, ii, 139.
- confcious*, inwardly sensible of wrong-doing. III, i, 353. —aware. V, ii, 67.

- confists*, lies, has its place. III, i, 489.
- courtesie*, generosity, benevolence. V, iii, 73.
- Courtfhip*, courteous behavior, courtesy. III, i, 276; 439.
- credits*, reputations, good name. I, ii, 67.
- curiosity*, elegance of construction. II, ii, 67.
- curious*, careful, studious, solicitous. IV, i, 102. —made with art or care; elaborately or beautifully wrought; fine; "nice". *Cit. Song.* l. 5.
- dag*, a kind of heavy pistol or hand-gun. IV, i, 170 *s. d.*
- debate*, strife, dissension, quarreling. III, i, 443.
- decent*, becoming, appropriate, fitting. I, ii, 77.
- defeatures*, defeats. I, ii, 177.
- demonftrauely*, in a manner that indicates clearly or plainly. IV, i, 55.
- deferued*, deserving. II, ii, 189.
- determine*, decree. II, ii, 172.
- detract*, disparage, traduce, speak evil of. I, ii, 271.
- dif-become*, misbecome, be unfitting for or unworthy of. V, iii, 47.
- difcouery*, revelation, disclosure. III, i, 91; V, iii, 194.
- diftafte*, estrangement, quarrel. IV, ii, 1. —offence. V, iii, 15.
- doubtfull*, fearful, apprehensive. IV, ii, 88.
- doubts*, apprehensions. III, i, 246.
- earth'd*, buried. II, i, 126.
- edify*, gain instruction; profit, in a spiritual sense. IV, i, 62.
- engag'd*, obliged, attached by gratitude. III, i, 242.
- engender*, copulate. III, i, 423.
- engine*, device, artifice, plot. III, i, 157.
- enignes*, signs, tokens, characteristic marks. I, i, 144.
- entertaine*, accept. V, ii, 82.
- entertainment*, provision for the support of persons in service—especially soldiers; pay, wages. I, ii, 188.
- erueft*, a sum of money paid as an installment to secure a contract. V, i, 44.
- except against*, take exception against. IV, iii, 19.
- exhaust*, "draw out"; not as to-day, "use up completely." II, i, 103.
- expreffion*, designation. V, i, 33.
- factor*, one who has the charge and manages the affairs of an estate; a bailiff, land-steward. I, ii, 135. Cf. Shakespeare, *Henry IV, Part I*, III, ii, 147: "Percy is but my factor," etc.
- familiar*, well acquainted. I, i, 3.
- feares*, fears for. IV, ii, 89.
- fit*, punish; visit with a fit penalty. III, i, 253.
- forefpake*, foretold, predicted. III, i, 251.
- fortunes*, happens, chances, occurs. V, ii, 16.
- gallimaufry*, contemptuous term for "a man of many accomplishments"; a ridiculous medley; a hodge-podge. II, ii, 95.
- gamefters*, those addicted to amorous sport. III, i, 33.
- Geometrician*, one who measures the earth or land; a land-surveyor. IV, i, 21.

- get*, beget. I, ii, 246.
- gigglet*, a lewd, wanton woman. III, i, 308.
- honestie*, honorable character, in a wide, general sense. To the Elizabethan it especially connoted *fidelity*, *trustiness*. II, i, 115.
- horflock*, a shackle for a horse's feet; hence applied to any hanging lock; a padlock. IV, i, 78.
- humanity*, learning or literature concerned with human culture: a term including the various branches of polite scholarship, as grammar, rhetoric, poetry, and esp. the study of the ancient Latin and Greek classics. II, i, 3.
- humour*, used here in the specific Jonsonian sense of a dominating trait or mood. I, i, 124; ii, 31.
- employments*, services (to a person). I, ii, 28.
- individually*, indivisibly, inseparably. II, ii, 316.
- Infanta*, the title properly applied to a daughter of the King and Queen of Spain or Portugal. IV, i, 75.
- iffues*, actions, deeds. II, ii, 198.
- kinde*, agreeable, pleasant, winsome. *Court. Song.* l. 4.
- Lard*, an obsolete form of *Lord*. IV, i, 2. Cf. Congreve, *Old Bach.*, II, iii: "Lard, Cousin, you talk oddly."
- League*, probably used for *Leaguer* (so emended by M., f.): a military camp, especially one engaged in a siege. III, i, 175.
- learnd*, informed. III, i, 156.
- legge*, an obeisance made by drawing back one leg and bending the other; a bow, scrape. III, i, 124.
- liuely, living*. II, i, 46. —gay, full of life. II, ii, 76. —life-like. II, i, 232.
- map*, embodiment, incarnation. II, ii, 136. Cf. H. Smith, *Sinf. Man's Search*, Six Sermons: "What were man if he were once left to himself? A map of misery."
- mome*, blockhead, dolt, fool. *Court. Song.* l. 13.
- monument*, sepulchre. I, ii, 212.
- moue*, urge, appeal to, make a request to. IV, iv, 11.
- next*, shortest, most convenient or direct. V, i, 37.
- nice*, petty, insignificant, trifling. III, i, 442.
- note*, show forth; demonstrate. III, i, 504.
- Obiect*, bring forward in opposition as an adverse reason, or by way of accusation. IV, iv, 174.
- obnoxious*, liable, exposed, open, vulnerable. III, i, 354.
- obsequious*, prompt to serve or please, dutiful. V, iii, 90.
- obferuers*, those who show respect, deference, or dutiful attention; obsequious followers. IV, iv, 43.
- Orphants*, obsolete corrupt form of *Orphans*. I, ii, 206. It survives in dialect. Cf. James Whitcomb Riley's *Little Orphant Annie*.

- ouercome*, usually, "conquer", "prevail"; but here, "out-do", "surpass". I, i, 187.
- parts*, function, office, business, duty. Formerly used in the plural, as here, though usually when referring to a number of persons. I, i, 9; ii, 9; V, iii, 39. —qualities. IV, iv, 105.
- pious*, used in the arch. sense of *dutiful*. I, i, 101.
- practicke*, practical work or application; practice as opposed to theory. II, i, 2.
- Praecipuce* (mis-print for *precipice*), a precipitate or headlong fall or descent, especially to a great depth. III, i, 464.
- prefently*, immediately, quickly, promptly. IV, iv, 89.
- prefident* [variant of *precedent*], example, instance, illustration. V, iii, 226.
- preuent*, anticipate. I, i, 64; ii, 17; IV, ii, 32.
- Prouince*, duty, office, function; branch of the government. I, ii, 23.
- punctual*, punctilious, careful of detail. IV, i, 42.
- purl*, the pleat or fold of a ruff or band; a frill. II, ii, 77.
- quick*, alive. I, ii, 178.
- Ram-heads*, cuckolds. II, i, 31.
- recent*, fresh. II, i, 19.
- roaring*, riotous, bullying, hectoring. IV, i, 203.
- rawcily*, formerly a word of more serious reprobation than in modern usage: "with presumptuous insolence." I, ii, 106.
- scandall*, to spread scandal concerning; to defame. I, ii, 58.
- sect*, class, order. V, i, 79.
- seene*, experienced, versed. III, i, 268.
- seruant*, a professed lover; one who is devoted to the service of a lady. II, ii, 40; etc.
- seruice*, the devotion of a lover. III, i, 81; IV, iv, 107.
- set forth*, adorned. IV, iv, 106.
- skills*, signifies, matters. I, i, 286.
- snort*, snore. *Court. Song.* l. 12.
- soft*, tender-hearted, pitiful. II, i, 23.
- sooth'd*, assented to; humoured by agreement or concession. V, i, 55.
- Spittle*, hospital. III, i, 210. Cf. Shakespeare, *Henry V*, II, i, 78; V, i, 86.
- spleene*, caprice. I, i, 49.
- stare*, estate. II, ii, 294; III, i, 24; IV, iv, 178; V, iii, 119.
- submisse*, submissive. I, i, 179.
- take*, charm, captivate. I, ii, 206.
- taske*, take to task; censure, reprove, chide, reprehend = *tax*. I, ii, 64.
- temper*, temperateness, calmness of mind, self-restraint. V, iii, 40.
- theorique*, theory; theoretical knowledge, as opposed to practice. II, i, 2.
- Thrift*, here used in the old sense of *prosperity* or *success*. I, i, 170.
- toyes*, whims, caprices, trifles. III, i, 442.

*uncivil*, unrefined, ill-bred, not polished. III, i, 490.

*vails*, perquisites. V, i, 83.

*Vifitation*, visit. II, ii, 310.

*wagtaile*, a term of familiarity and contempt; a wanton. II, ii, 7.

*where*, whereas. I, i, 71.

*wittoll*, a man who knows of his wife's infidelity and submits to it; a submissive cuckold. V, iii, 99.

*wreake*, vengeance, revenge. IV, iv, 183; V, ii, 43.

## BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTE

THE Quarto, and the various modern editions and translations of *The Fatal Dowry* have already been recorded in the opening pages of the INTRODUCTION. In the editions there noted of the collected works of Massinger will be found all the plays which bear his name. (*Believe As You List* appears only in Cunningham's edition of Gifford and in the Mermaid Series' *Massinger*.) Field's two independent plays, *Woman is a Weathercock* (Q. 1612) and *Amends for Ladies* (Q's. 1618, 1639), were reprinted by J. P. Collier, London, 1829. They are included in Thomas White's *Old English Dramas*, London, 1830; in W. C. Hazlitt's edition of Dodsley's *Old English Plays*, London, Reeves and Turner, 1875; and in the Mermaid Series volume, *Nero and Other Plays*, with an Introduction by A. W. Verity, London and New York, 1888. All other extant dramas in which either Massinger or Field had a share may be found in any edition of the collected works of Beaumont & Fletcher, with the exception of *Sir John van Olden Barnavelte*, which appears in vol. II of Bullen's *Old Plays*, London, Weyman and Sons, 1883.

The stage version of *The Fatal Dowry* by Sheil is printed in *French's Acting Edition*, vol. 9. Of the related plays, *The Lady's Trial* and *The Fair Penitent* may be found in all editions of the collected works respectively of John Ford and Nicholas Rowe; *The Fair Penitent* is also published along with Rowe's *Jane Shore* in the Belles Lettres Series, 1907. For *The Insolvent*, see *The Dramatic Works of Aaron Hill, Esq.*, 2 vols., 1760. DER GRAF VON CHAROLAIS ein Trauerspiel von Richard Beer-Hofmann is printed by S. Fischer, Berlin, 1906.

The following works have bearing upon the play or its authors: Beck, C.: *Phil. Massinger, THE FATALL DOWRY. Einleitung zu einer neuen Ausgabe.* Beyreuth, 1906.

Boyle, R.: *Beaumont, Fletcher and Massinger.* Englische Studien, vol. V.

CAMBRIDGE HISTORY OF ENGLISH LITERATURE, THE,—vol. VI. Cambridge, 1910.

Courthope, W. J.: *A History of English Poetry*, vol. IV. Macmillan, 1903.



- Cumberland: His famous comparison of *The Fatal Dowry* with *The Fair Penitent*, which originally appeared in *The Observer*, Nos. LXXVII-LXXIX, is reprinted in Gifford's Edition of Massinger.
- DICTIONARY OF NATIONAL BIOGRAPHY—*Field*, by J. Knight; *Massinger*, by R. Boyle.
- Fleay, F. G.: *A Biographical Chronicle of the English Drama (1559-1642)*. 2 vols. London. Reeves and Turner. 1891.  
*Annals of the Career of Nathaniel Field*. Englische Studien, vol. XIII.
- Genest, John: *Some Account of the English Stage from the Restoration in 1660 to 1830*. 10 vols. Bath, 1832.
- Gosse, E. W.: *The Jacobean Poets*. (Univ. Series). Scribner's, 1894.
- Koepfel, E.: *Quellenstudien zu den Dramen George Chapman's, Philip Massinger's und John Ford's*. Strassburg. 1897.
- Murray, John Tucker: *English Dramatic Companies (1558-1642)*. 2 vols. Houghton, Mifflin & Co. 1910.
- Oliphant, E. F.: *The Works of Beaumont and Fletcher*. Englische Studien, vols. XIV-XVI. [This is not concerned with *The Fatal Dowry*, but contains inquiry into other collaboration work of Massinger and Field in plays of the period, with an analysis of the distinctive characteristics of Massinger (XIV, 71-6) and the same for Field (XV, 330-1).]
- Phelan, James: *On Philip Massinger*. Halle. 1878. Reprinted in *Anglia*, vol. II, 1879.
- Schelling, F. E.: *Elizabethan Drama*. 2 vols. Houghton, Mifflin & Co. 1908.
- Schwarz, F. H.: *Nicholas Rowe's FAIR PENITENT. A Contribution to Literary Analysis. With a Side-reference to Richard Beer-Hofmann's GRAF VON CHAROLAIS*. Berne. 1907.
- Stephens, Sir Leslie: *Philip Massinger*. The Cornhill Magazine. Reprinted in *Hours in a Library*, Third Series. 1879.
- Swinburne, A. C.: *Philip Massinger*. The Fortnightly Review, July, 1889.
- Thorndike, Ashley H.: *Tragedy*. Houghton, Mifflin & Co. 1908.
- Ward, A. W.: *A History of English Dramatic Literature*. 3 vols. Macmillan. 1899.
- Wurzbach, W. von: *Philip Massinger*. Shakesp. Jahrb., vols. XXXV and XXXVI.



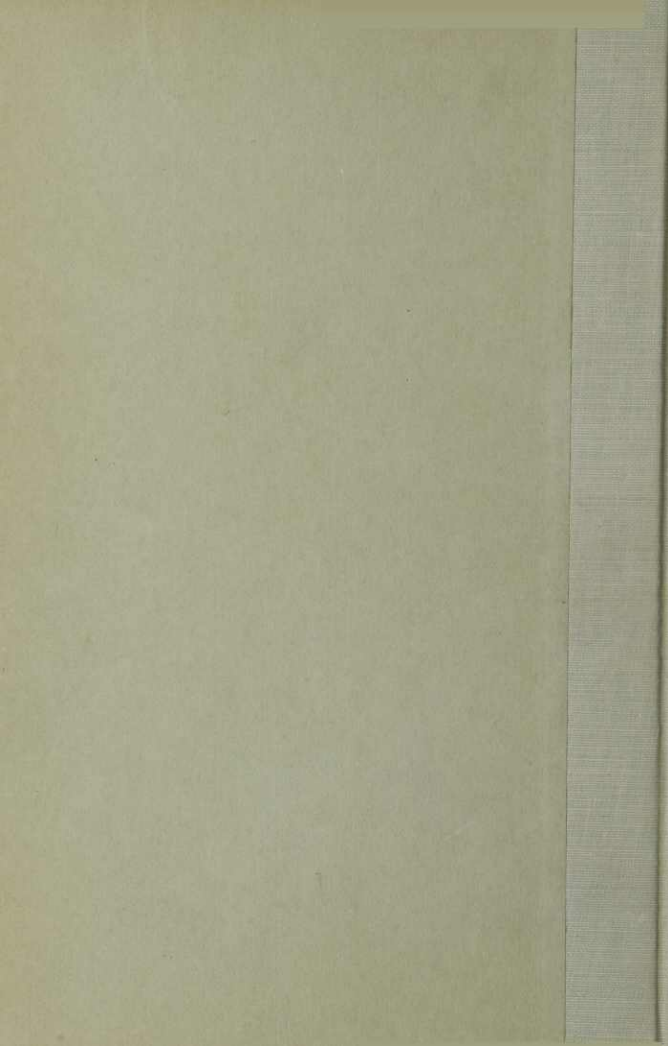














**GretagMachbeth™ ColorChecker Color Rendition Chart**

